



# RUNNING AWAY FROM THE HERO

BOOK 01

*Phantom of the Moonlit Night*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Running Away From The Hero

(용사를 피해 튀어라!)

by

Phantom of the Moonlit Night

# Synopsis

---

After living for a long time in a fantasy world, I ended up becoming a villain!

Whilst I beat up both bad guys and good guys as a villain, the legendary hero appeared in front of me.

“Teacher!”

He seems to be my disciple.

Crap..

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the team @ [Seonbi Novels](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Prologue

---

Do you know what a “hero” is?

It is a word that is used to describe cheat-like existences.

Of course, the dictionary would say something completely different, but that’s what I think of them as.

Seriously, how the hell do you go about beating up a dragon as a human? Dragons are supposed to be cheats from the moment they’re born.

They even study hard, and crave for knowledge.

And just look at their life expectancy. A thousand years is enough for a nation to rise and fall.

But to dragons, that isn’t much. That thousand years is exactly the amount of time it takes for a hatchling to fully grow up!

But did you ever see heroes taking down hatchlings? NO!

The dragons they take down are the adults that have lived for nearly five millennia!

And when you try looking at the average age of the heroes, it’s all around 25 years old.

It's just that high because there are some heroes that are really old. There's actually quite a lot of cases where heroes beat up dragons at the age of 18.

Ah, but why I am I complaining so much about heroes and dragons right now, you ask?

“Here you go, teacher.”

“Hoho... right.”

Who would this young man in front of me be? It's Raina Rel Swin! The greatest hero of our age who saved the empire!

Ah, he's also my disciple.

And what did this disciple of mine bring me?!

A warm heart! Not the kind they serve you in restaurants, but a dragon's heart!

In order to gain some time to run away, I talked about the evil dragon in some other kingdom, saying “Ah, the kingdom next to ours is quite pitiable...” Who would've thought that the guy would kill the dragon and then chase me down in just a week!

And!

“H, hello!”

“I, I’ve heard much about you...”

“ ... ”

The guy even brought back a princess that had been captured by the dragon, along with her escort wizard. Hahaha... what the hell.

Mm? Why am I so unhappy, you ask?

Isn’t it good that my disciple is strong, you ask?

Oh, right. I still haven’t told you about my profession.

I’m a villain.

# **Chapter 1 - I Didn't Know Back Then**



# Chapter 1. I Didn't Know Back Then. (1)

---

Normally, when you go to a fantasy world, you might become a legendary hero, or you might plug in your stick everywhere and create a giant harem, or instead, you could start a revolution and defeat evil emperors and mages.

Yeah... no.

That kind of a thing never actually happens.

Understanding the language of the world when you reincarnate?

Don't make me laugh. That kind of shit is only for the main character.

Ah, it's not that I couldn't talk, but, do you honestly think that some people in a different dimension would know Korean?

Language magic? Of course it exists, but what kind of a crazy idiot would use it on a baby?

In the end, I had to study my ass off and learn the common tongue.

After that, my social class.

Yahoo!!

I'm a commoner!

Of course I wouldn't be a noble.

Then, I can just use my knowledge from my other world to...  
nope.

Korean education sucks balls. There's no way to use what you've learned other than for tutoring.

Don't believe me? Try going to college. Everything you learned for the last 12 years of your education is now useless.

You can't even apply what you learned to anything at all!

Korean? Nope! English? Nope! Korean History and World History? Nope!

I somehow managed to be called a genius for my math skills. But... hell, apparently you qualify as a genius as long as you can add and subtract.

In other words, you can be a genius with your elementary grade knowledge! But do you know where do you get to use your genius skills? By selling crops! As expected, reality is bullshit.

And a while later, my parents passed away. The reason? The

works of a black wizard, and the oppression from an evil noble!

...Actually, they died after getting involved in a hero's chase.

If I were to explain it clearly, it's like one of those scenes in an action movie where the heroes get into a car chase with the villains.

It's a scene that makes you ball your fists and shout out excitedly. Now, try imagining that happening in real life.

It looks good in movies, but it causes all kinds of harm in reality.

That "harm" included the death of tens of people and the injury of hundreds.

Even though they're parents from another world, I should take revenge for my them... nope.

It's not that I don't want to, but in the chase, there were just so many powerful skills flying around everywhere. There's no way to chase after them, and in the first place, I didn't even know how to continue living.

And... So I begin training! Nope.

Knight school? I'd rather build an inn with the admission fee.

Magic, or summoning spirits? I said this before, but I'm no main character. No talent, meaning: 0% chance that's ever going to happen!

Then what do I do?

Crack!

"K, kuuh..."

"Should have handed it over when I told you to."

In a dark alley, a boy with a knife in his hand was threatening a single man.

Ah, isn't this the kind of thing the main character goes through when he's still weak? But the thing is.

Crack!

"Ah, fine, I'll give it to you!"

I'm the one with the knife.

I only have one advantage in this world: a free mind.

Around here, peasants never really get educated, so they just live

their lives like machines, but I'm different! Steal a bit, beat up some people, do whatever you can to live!

What happened to my morals? If you're going to talk about morals, first talk to the god who summoned me here with no warnings! Yeah, they have real gods here!

I just kind of drifted off into this kind of a lifestyle.

“...Well, that's just my life, isn't it.”

No love life! To think that there would be no love, even in a fantasy world!

No, wait, I wasn't trying to talk about that. Right now, I'm working as a petty official in an evil organization.

Mm? That's a lower rank than you expected? Hey, don't underestimate petty officials damn it.

This evil organization was formed by gathering all kinds of people in the back alleys. In other words, even petty officials have a pretty high position in the organization! I actually have a higher rank than most people.

Of course, in return for risking my life at work, I get paid pretty well. You get to take in quite a bit of money when working with dirty stuff like this. If your pay is shit then what you're doing is shit, no one would ever do these kinds of things, after all.

And like that, I lived, working hard as a petty officer and avoiding heroes as much as I could.

At some point, I reached my 40s and was promoted from a petty officer to an instructor.

Hm, now I'm finally strong! Nope. As I mentioned, I have no talent. I never had the talent for magic or summoning spirits, and even though I'm pretty good with a sword in my hand, at a place where using a life sword is everything, I'm pretty much useless.

Ah, what's a life sword, you ask? It's like a sword aura that you see in novels. They call it life sword here, because you put in energy into the sword. A sword that has been injected with evil energy through the use of dead people or evil magic would be called death sword. You know, these words actually sound like their respective Korean versions, which makes things a bit easier.

But there are some problems that result from that as well. Everyone knows a desk is called a desk, yeah? But then in this world, the word for "desk" would be pronounced as "chair." It seems trivial, right? It actually drives you crazy.

Back to the original topic. I'm an instructor right now! I'm the guy who makes talent sprout out of kids!

But because they're still kids, they can't use the life sword yet. They might have the talent, but to me, who battled in land, sea, and sky, and even experienced traveling between dimensions, their

talent is nothing!

And the children in this world are all like blank slates! My brainwashing powers are seriously top-class in the organization as well... if god didn't exist in this world, I probably would've ruled this world as a weird leader of a cult. After all, I even managed to strengthen the organization through the mystical art of the pyramid scheme!

Anyway, I, as the head instructor of the organization, looked at the future members of this place, and spoke coldly.

“I am your instructor, Naruan.”

Why do I speak coldly? Of course, it's to intimidate them!

Even talented kids get intimidated if I speak like this.

Of course, there are some that don't get intimidated.

Let's see, those kinds of kids would be... number 17, 46... and 102?

These guys are the real gems here!

“From now on, you will completely obey the instructions of your instructors. If you get curious about anything, you may ask your instructor questions. But as the answers may differ from each instructor, it would be a good idea to share the information with

others.“

I speak as if I'm allowing them to do something, but with this, the instructors can't say whatever they want! Why? Because I allowed everyone to share information! Why did I allow it? It's definitely not because the instructors would say all kinds of things about me to their disciples, causing me to be seen in a bad light and eventually be fired... it's definitely not that, I swear. Hum, hum.

After saying a few other things to keep my reputation in the organization from going down.

“I'll take care of numbers 17, 47, and 102. Separate them from the rest of the group, and bring them to me.”

As the head instructor, I usually have to show some good results to the organization. Fearless kids are usually talented, which makes things easier.

If they aren't? I'll have to work my ass off. That usually does it. But in that case... I'd be the one who has to work...

The three kids were dragged in front of me by the other instructors. As expected... I struck gold.

They all look quite amazing, despite being a little over ten. Since all of them have short hair, I can't really distinguish what gender they are, but they're sure to grow into beautiful men/women in the future. Hmm... even so.



What matters about becoming either a beautiful man or woman, you ask?

It's easy to trick people. What's the one thing that matters the most when someone falls in love? The heart? Ha, nice joke. It's the looks. Fate? First love? They only exist because of good looks. Of course, there are cases where people get in love with ugly, or average looking people. But that kind of love is something that develops only after a long time! When you first meet an ugly person, you get plagued with bad impressions of the person!

But if that person was pretty? You begin liking him/her immediately.

In other words! Villains have to look pretty as well! Ah, that doesn't mean I am, though. I'm pretty old, which means that I already have a pretty good resume. I don't need to rely on my looks.

Well, that's that. Let's find out their gender first.

“...Hm, quite girlish.”

I never directed the comment to anyone. If I just make a comment like this, then...

“Who... are you calling girlish?”

The kids are unafraid, even when I intimidate them with an emotionless face? They aren't actually unafraid. Rather, they're pretending to be unafraid. Why? Acting afraid would hurt their pride. And what happens when I poke that pride? Well, the answer would be disciple 102, who is currently glaring at me while gritting his teeth. Anyway... 2 girls? Huh...

It feels like the organization's taking in a lot of girls because the new Sword Saint was female. Well... I suppose it's a good thing? When I was a newbie, there were only brawny men around me... Hm... that's why I never got a girlfriend. No, really. ...Probably.

The fact that I'm thinking this while saying something completely different just goes to prove that I am an experienced villain. My mouth, retaining the coldness from before, spits out a word.

“You.”

When I just give a glance, 102 blushes a bit, but stays silent.

“I dislike talkativeness. Prove that you're not girlish through results, not words.”

Of course, I'd have to be very talkative and humble when I'm in front of a hero, but in the organization, results mattered more. Being talkative just means there's more paperwork.

But I didn't know back then.. Why these kids came here, and

what their presence here would eventually cause!

# Chapter 1. I Didn't Know Back Then. (2)

---

## 1.25 Their Story.

### [1] 17's Story

The first daughter of the great Nerumia Family in the Karuan Empire.

This is the identity of me, Nerumia El Ria. So why am I here?

There is only one reason for me being here. This organization was suspected of stealing the latter parts of the family's sword arts as well as the family heirloom.

A year back, our family suffered from the humiliation of getting the latter part of their sword arts stolen, but the bigger problem than that was getting the heirloom stolen.

The Nerumia Family was with the Empire since its birth. And the heirloom had been with us for up to 700 years. We only found out later that it had been stolen.

For up to half a year, we had been using a fake heirloom that had even the imperial palace fooled. If it wasn't for the fact that the heirloom actually had a special spell cast on it, no, if it wasn't for my grandfather who came to visit us from the wizard's tower after 3 years, we may have been using that heirloom up to this point.

Our family focused more on magic than swords, which was why we had been searching for the thieves slowly and carefully.

But this time, the heirloom was stolen. The object that represented our family had been stolen. Because of this, the entire family had been sent to try to find the heirloom, and this was the same for me.

As a child, however, there weren't many things I could actually do. I could only disguise myself as a slave, and enter the organization that way.

Once I entered, I was taken to train for up to three months. For me, this was like normal training, but it seemed to be different for other children, seeing how there were quite a lot of kids disqualified.

And now, we get assigned to different instructors.

On the platform in front of us, an instructor began to talk with a cold face.

“I am your instructor, Naruan.”

He seemed to be in his early 40s. Seeing how there were other instructors behind him, he was probably the head instructor.

As expected of a member of an evil organization, his emotionless face along with his cold voice had an effect of making chills run

down your spine.

Kids around me, and even me, flinched from his voice, but I tried my best not to be subdued by his voice, and glared at the man. Then, at that moment...

‘W, what was that?’

At that instant, it almost felt like the man was watching me? Or did he manage to notice how I actually glared at him?

The head instructor continued on with his emotionless face.

“From now on, you will completely obey the instructions of your instructors. If you get curious about anything, you may ask your instructor questions. But as the answers may differ from each instructor, it would be a good idea to share the information with others.”

In a place where there may be spies, he goes on and allows the sharing of information. The man is clearly stating that they have the capability to catch all kinds of spies under any kind of situation, and that our life is in their hands.

The instructor’s finished speaking after a short moment, and his last words immediately made me paralyzed.

“I’ll take care of numbers 17, 47, and 102. Separate them from the rest of the group, and bring them to me.”

It wasn't just me, but out of three people, he had picked me.

Was this... coincidence? Or did he already realize who i was?

Hundreds of different thoughts floated up my head, but in the end, I was taken up to instructor Naruan by one of the other instructors. Instructor Naruan glanced at each of us for a bit, then made a single comment with his cold voice.

“...Hm, quite girlish.”

I thought that the comment was directed towards me, but it did not take a while to realize that that was a mistake.

“Who... are you calling girlish?”

“You.”

102 was currently looking at the instructor with gritted teeth. He really was pretty enough to be mistaken for a girl. But, I feel like I've seen him before? Am I just mistaken?

I thought for a moment, because the boy reminded me of someone, but strangely enough, I couldn't come up with anything.

“I dislike talkativeness. Prove that you're not girlish through results, not words.”

While I had been thinking, Naruan threw the sentence at me. After this, he scanned us once more with his cold eyes, went to his work table, and began to do paperwork.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

All three of us looked at each other with confused faces. After a moment of silence, 102, seemingly tired of the silence in the room, glared at the instructor and opened his mouth.

“What... are you doing?”

“Work.”

The instructor said this in the most natural manner, as if what he was doing the the most obvious thing to do in the world. 102 was rendered speechless for a second because of this, but he soon shouted out some words through his gritted teeth.

“T, then, what are we supposed to do?!”

“Your rooms can be found when you open the door that’s next to you. Most of your essential tools should be located there, and if you



need anything else, come to me.”

The instructor said this as he pointed to a door in the side. Before 102 began to complain once more, the instructor said something that made me, no, if I didn’t see wrong, all three of us freeze.

“I’m not talking about tha...”

“Training begins 7 o’clock in the morning, and ends at 6 in the evening. You can do whatever you like during the times other than this. This is my building, a building that I alone manage. I do not care about what you do in here. There is no need to hide your secrets about revenge, desires, or stories to everyone in the building other than me.”

As expected... he knew? No, then what did his words just now mean? My head automatically rotated left and right.

My eyes met with those of the people next to me. 46, and 102 were probably making the same face as me at the time.

And... their eyes were both saying this.

[You as well?]

And about the time when fear, shock, and terror began to crawl up in our hearts, the instructor, who still wasn’t even glancing at us, opened his mouth with words that contained both coldness and a hint of joy.

“Training starts tomorrow... rest well.”

And, from that point on, I began to experience something that I could never forget, no, something that had changed me completely.

# Chapter 1. I Didn't Know Back Then. (3)

---

“Phew...”

After confirming that the kids entered their rooms, I let out a sigh.

Honestly, maintaining a cold aura like this is really annoying. But what am I supposed to do? If I don't do that, I'd be seen as an idiot.

A long time ago, I acted as a kind instructor, but then the kids saw me as a total idiot. They didn't even listen to me. It's like how you enjoy a kind teacher's class, but have shitty grades in it, and even though you hate a class where a scary teacher waves around his metal bat threateningly, you have good grades there.

The bat is not at fault here. Humans, who refuse to move unless hit by the bat, are the problem here.

Even so, as a person who worked as an instructor for a long time, I have several strategies that work quite well in training children.

Strategy number one!

Act as if you know everything about your students!

Honestly, what kind of an idiot would enter an evil organization? Especially those kids who have talent.

The kids become pretty good at handling tasks after being trained for a few months. Why would they enter an evil organization, when they could be doing something more legal with their newfound skills?

Like all other villains, they all have a similar story. They might want something, or they might want revenge. Or they might have some other story they can't talk about.

Well, mostly they're just people who have a degree of hate against the nobles. Sometimes, spies do come into the organization, but when you act like you know everything, they just can't do anything.

And whenever I reach a barrier while teaching... hehehe, I can just make use of my brainwashing-I mean educating-skill!

There's no way mere ten year olds can resist something that even older kids can't take. I didn't type in "reading" and "psychology" in my hobbies list for nothing, you know?!

Strategy number two! The room that the kids went into!

That room was originally supposed to be made for me. So why am I not going in there?

Well, there are two reasons, with one of them being safety. An evil organization has a lot of hate directed at it, and heroes

occasionally attack us for no reason at all. The room that I made to hide away from those heroes was this, my office.

If you look carefully, you'll find that there are no windows in the office. Then, there are only two entrances one can enter this room through. First, there's the main door that the kids used to get in, and there's the other door that leads to my private chambers. If you get in through the other door, you'll find the children, but if you go through the main door, you'll find yourself in company with a bunch of alarms and traps.

And as long as I'm inside the office, I can get a sense of what the hell's going on before anyone else. Adding to that, this office has all the tools required for me to control the traps in the building, and it even has several escape tunnels. In other words, this place is a steel fortress. I can proudly say that this room is safer than the room that the master of our organization uses.

Because of that, I sleep in my office! My waist hurt a bit at first, but I got used to it eventually. My life is more important.

The other reason why I'm not going into my room is because it makes it easier for me to administrate the kids, and at the same time, make them like me a little more.

What's so good about making them like me, you ask? These kids are like my potential life insurance! If one of them becomes successful, I need to stick by him/her as much as I can, but would I be able to do that if I treat them badly? I'd be lucky if I got out alive.

Because of that, I need to become a tsundere instructor who is both kind yet harsh to his students.

Hm, as expected, the power of tsunderes are amazing. It works particularly well around here, especially because no one knows about the concept of tsunderes.

The point of this would be to say stuff like [Hm, I'm not training you because I want you to get strong. It's all for the organization!] and [I'm not healing you because I'm worried! This is all for the organization!], to make the kids think something along the lines of [Ah, he's doing it all for us...]. I have to be careful, though. I might end up becoming a cold-blooded instructor if I make a mistake.

Well, there are many other points other than just that one, but that's another story for another time. Right now, I need to do paperwork.

I've mentioned before that I had no talent whatsoever, but there is still that one advantage I have against others: The Korean buff!

No one can catch up to my office work speed! I, who has been trained by countless sleepless nights in the office, have no equal, other than perhaps the prime minister of the Empire!

Work work work! Infinite work power!

Find the core statement of a paper, and stamp! I am the man who

is faster than no other in paperwork!

After quickly finishing my work like so, I do a quick stretch, then enter the kids' room with a knock.

Knock knock.

"I'm going in."

And the first thing I see when I get in is... what the?

"What's going on."

I said this with a lower voice than the one that I normally use.

Why? Because it looked like these kids were trying to rank themselves already, haha.

17 had a staff in hand, and 46 had a dagger both hands. 102, on the other hand, had a longsword, which seemed a little too big for him.

The kids all simultaneously turned to look at me..... something feels wrong! The moment I thought that, my villainous senses cried out.

-danger!

The moment I stepped backwards, I was able to hear a small chant from 17's mouth.

“Burn, hellfire!”

As soon as the words were spoken, a flame rose out of her staff! Fuck! They weren't trying to rank themselves! This is mutiny!

Shit! It looks like these kids were more prideful than I thought. I didn't even prepare anything yet, and they get into a mutiny already!

But this is my house! My fortress! I already have several defensive mechanism that I prepared in advance!

The moment the staff got aimed towards me, I lift my foot, and smashed it on a spot next to the door.

Boom!

“W, what the!”

A vibration that shook the entire room rang out! Huhahaha! This is the power of a cultivator's attack! ....well, I actually just stepped on a spring trap below the room.

The three most important components of magic are the contract,



the imagination, and concentration. Unless one is a magician of considerable power, it is easy to break their concentration with a simple shake like this. A child's magic like this should...

Bang!

Easily be destroyed... eh...

A part of the wall flew off. This much vibration should've broken a spell of a novice magician though?

I was surprised, but thankfully, my instincts worked faster than my thoughts. I crouched down, and took out a single dagger from my pocket. And at that moment, a dagger flew my way!

A dagger that was in 46's left hand was flung towards me. Hmph! I struck away the dagger with ease, looked at 46 and 102, and instantly formulated a plan in my head!

First of all, I'll scare 46 with my dagger....

Stab.

Eh?

It felt like my process of thought just stopped right then. When I made a stabbing motion to scare 46, the boy accelerated forward towards me, and stopped the dagger by sacrificing his left hand!

What the hell, did this kid just pull off something that even I, who lived for 30 years on earth and 40 years in this fantasy world, don't dare attempt?

But this time, my head moved along with my instincts. I quickly gave up my dagger, dodged the one that 46 was swinging with his right hand, and grabbed onto 102's attack with my left hand.

Kuaa! As I thought, that kid's completely crazy! Hurts like hell!

I can't be distracted by pain, though! My life's more important! In 0.5 seconds, I grabbed the surprised 102 all the while holding onto his sword, and threw him to 17. Then, I threw the longsword in my hand lightly into the air, and sprayed the blood that came out of my left hand into 46's eyes. I then kicked his abdomen, and made him fly into the other two kids. Ah, of course, I made it hurt a little more than it should've as revenge.

And before the longsword hit the floor, I kicked it so that it lodged itself right in front of the kids, and walked away towards the kitchen all the while talking in a cold voice.

"I'll prepare food. Clean the room during that time."

Ah, my hand seriously hurts.

# Chapter 1. I Didn't Know Back Then. (4)

---

## 1.5 Their Story

### [2] 46's Story

I was born in a normal family, and grew up like a normal kid. That's... what I thought was going to happen for the rest of my childhood.

But this normal family got destroyed in an instant. Like all normal peasants, we lived by farming, and like all other normal peasant family, our family got in danger when we pulled up a poor harvest.

In the end, we began borrowing money, and... that was the start of our destruction.

Were we unlucky? The people we happened to borrow money from happened to be a part of an evil organization, and our debt increased tremendously day by day.

Laws did not apply to those people, and we could not fight back.

Eventually... my parents were not able to pay off the debt, and got dragged away by them. And... I never got to see them again.

They probably died. I was young, but I still knew that by instinct.

It probably happened then. The process of my emotions dying, that is. Slowly, my emotions began to disappear, apart from pure rage.

I eventually returned to the place where I lived, and lurked in the dark alleys.

I always fought the other kids who offered me to join their group. How much time passed ever since I first started doing that? Eventually, a man came to me.

“Do you want to join us?”

“...What kind of a group is it.”

The man smirked, and opened his mouth.

“An evil organization. You’d die as a tool in the end, but... if you manage to survive, you may be able to collect quite a bit of cash.”

“...I’ll go.”

This was my goal from the start. Even if this organization was unrelated to the death of my parents, I just have to get stronger here. Thinking this, I spent my time in the organization.

Every day, there was harsh training. But I endured.

And one day, I found him. One of the men that threatened my parents every day. I was at the right place. But I stayed patient, and bided my time.

Ten years. Give me ten years.

I was a peasant's child anyway. There was no way the organization knew about my plan. That's what I had thought.

...That was what I had thought, before I met a single instructor.

Naruan, the head instructor.

I was dragged away with two other children by him to his office, and talked a little. But during the conversation, there was one thing that made me freeze.

“Training begins 7 o'clock in the morning, and ends at 6 in the evening. You can do whatever you like during the times other than this. This is my building, a building that I alone manage. I do not care about what you do in here. There is no need to hide your secrets about revenge, desires, or stories from everyone in the building other than me.”

...So he knew.

I could tell that the other children had some kind of story behind

them as well, seeing how their face was similar to mine. Then... the man knew that I was here for revenge.

What should I do... I thought of all kinds of things, but the instructor didn't even glance at us, and spoke coldly while doing his paperwork.

“Training starts tomorrow... rest well.”

Was this perhaps what a dragon's spell was like? We mindlessly obeyed his words and walked into our rooms. After a moment of silence, 102 opened his mouth.

“...You guys... as well?”

I looked at 102, who had spoken with a trembling voice, and nodded.

“Revenge.”

“I... have something to find.”

After hearing our answers, 102 looked up at the ceiling for a second, and opened his mouth.

“I... well, it's nothing.”

Silence continued. We both began to think on our own.

He knew? Why'd he take us in despite that? What happens now?

I am not afraid of death. Rather, life seems meaningless. But... I wanted revenge. It's meaningless, but... I wouldn't know the purpose of my life in this dark, grey world if I didn't have a goal like it.

Because of that...

“Should we kill him.”

The two people flinched at my words, then began to think. 102 seemed to have made his decision after a moment, and opened his mouth with a determined face.

“I'm against it. My goal is... survival, after all.”

“Me too.”

“Well... do what you want, then.”

There was no guarantee that we could it anyway. No, we wouldn't be able to win. I wasn't really serious when I offered that suggestion.

I tried to begin talking again, but.

Knock knock.

A chill ran down my spine just then, so I took out my daggers in wariness.

It wasn't just me. The others took out their weapons as well, and made a nervous face. And at the same time.

"I'm going in."

The instructor entered the room as he said that.

He took a look at us once, then spoke with an even colder voice than before.

"What's going on."

At that moment, we all exchanged a look with each other. And at the same time.

"Burn, hellfire!"

A red energy formed on 17's staff. Once that energy turned into a flame and was about to fly off, the instructor slammed the ground with his foot.



And...

Boom!

“W, what the!”

17 and 102 shouted out in surprise. I was surprised as well. The whole building shook with just that? It didn't make sense. He was definitely stronger than first-rate.

That was what I was thinking now, but I was able to realize that I had thought wrong after the fight. The place outside the room had little to no damage. Meaning... the instructor only used minimal amount of power needed to defend.

But I did not realize that at the current moment, and just frantically threw the dagger in my left hand.

Was I not focused enough? 102 and I attacked the moment the instructor turned his attention to the fire, but even faster than that, the instructor pulled out a dagger and swung it towards me.

‘I'll throw away my left hand!’

I threw away my left hand, and stopped the instructor's dagger. At the same time, 102's sword and my dagger moved towards the instructor, but the instructor threw away his dagger, and grabbed

onto the blade of 102's sword.

The instructor didn't let out even a tiny moan, and proceeded to throw 102 towards 17. At the same time, he threw the longsword into the air.

‘...Not yet!’

The enemy was empty handed, and compared to that, I had a dagger. I might not be able to kill him, but the others might be able to do the job if I injured him enough. I ran towards the instructor thinking that, but then the instructor sprayed the blood in his hands into my eyes.

‘?!’

My vision turned red at that exact moment. At the same time, my abdomen was filled with pain as well! Then, I seemed to have flown towards the other two kids, and felt even more pain as I landed on them.

Clank!

Something landed right in front of me. It was... it was probably the longsword from a moment ago. I couldn't see, but I could tell. If it landed just a little farther than it did just now, it would've struck my heart, instead of the floor.

My heart beat furiously, and I was able to realize something.

‘I don’t want to die.’

To be more specific, I was afraid of death.

Once I realized this, I was filled with fear and self-disgust.

Until I heard the instructor’s voice, that was.

“I’ll prepare food. Clean the room during that time.”

...What is this? What is this voice that is cold, and the same time, makes me feel quite useless?

I’m being filled with fear, and I’m also filled with self-loathing, but the man who made me realize that I was afraid of death seemed indifferent to everything.

Once I came back to my senses, I realized that I was cleaning the room with the other children.

And funnily enough... the food I ate that day was truly delicious.

# Chapter 1. I Didn't Know Back Then. (5)

---

Hohoho... I cooked food with an injured hand.

Ha, they're just devouring my food as if they don't even remember what just happened... how carefree. Even while my left hand is screaming in pain! Well, I should just endure for now. I suppose I'll look back at this in my retirement years and smile... let's just be satisfied with that.

I created a fusion dish between this world's cuisine, and earth's cuisine and fed the children. The taste? Hoho... my skills were accepted in the Organization's kitchen back in the old days. Of course the dish is tasty! I'm planning on making the kids like me more by giving them good food.

Even the young noble girl who came here a long time ago to spy on us became all tsundere-like after eating my dish, saying "Hmph! I'm just using you because I like your dish, not because I need you or anything, alright?" Well, that girl wasn't here at all though. She was just tsun.

The kids began to eat like starved beggars once they came in contact with my food. No, actually...

"...Do you have more?"

Hoho, look at this wicked child. 46, who has a hole in her hand just like me, looks up at me and asks for more food. Hah... Whose fault is it that I have a hole in my hand in the first place?! I want to

say that, but... this is for my future.

“If it’s food, I can always give more.”

The kid went into the kitchen, brought more food, and continued to eat. The two other kids did so as well.

What the... did they come here because they got hungry? Occasionally we do get kids like that, and they seem to be one of those kids. Eat, eat. If you’re hungry, you can always eat some more.

And about ten minutes later.

“...More.”

“Understood.”

Stop eattiiinnnnngggggg! My food! I didn’t eat dinner yet either! I’m hungry too, you bastards!

I made a lot, but these kids are simply ripping through the food. These bastards... is this revenge? Are you planning on making me skip dinner as revenge for getting beat up?!

It’s not like I can cook for myself later, either. I have my reputation and pride as an instructor. What do I mean by that? Think about it, everyone’s gone, and I’m just eating alone in the

kitchen. I'm lonely enough as a solo, damn it! No, wait, that's not what I was trying to talk about. Anyway, as I kept giving the children more food, I realized that 46 was looking up at me.

What do you what? I gave you food, so what else do you want?

When I looked at the kid with eyes that implied such a feeling, the kid looked down and whispered just loudly enough for everyone to hear.

“...Aren't you going to eat?”

At that moment, the other two kids flinched. Does it feel bad? Does it feel bad to miss out on more food? No, before that, what the hell is this kid saying? Is this some weird form of the carrot and stick strategy? Or did you feel bad when you tried to eat all my food? Well, whatever!

“I'll eat.”

Hum, hum, I definitely didn't give up my pride and reputation just for food. This is... um... let me think... um... yeah! This is to recreate a warm feeling of a family! I'm definitely not hungry! I'm just doing this to get close to them, and establish an even better relationship with them!

I'm also taking my sweet revenge by eating the food they were going to eat as well!

Did my revenge work? The kids made a dumb face for a moment, but once I asked “Aren’t you going to eat?” with a low voice, they began eating like dogs again.

...Yeah. Eat a lot. Eat a lot and become my life insurance!

Hum, hum.. I should eat.

And the next day.

“We will start with basic training.”

I looked at the three kids that were gathered at my personal training field, and smiled evilly inside. I pointed towards the field behind me with my head, and spoke.

“Run.”

The three kids made a confused face towards me, and I again spoke to the three kids with vengeance in mind.

“Breakfast is at 8:30AM.”

I ignored the kids, whose faces had become more confused than ever, and kept talking.

“From now on, you will work on training your strength from 7 to

8.”

This is my revenge!

“Run around the field for an hour with all your strength. But... for the one who ran the least amount of laps, there will be no breakfast.”

At that moment, 46, who was the fastest to understand, no, the fastest to perform this task, began to run.

Hoho, that kid... I’ve noticed from the mutiny and the dinner yesterday, but she’s the type to never starve anywhere. What a good kid.

The other 2 kids seemed to realize what was going on, and began to run. I looked at those kids, and took out my trump card.

“Apart from hurting others excessively... I will allow you to fight.”

Puhaha! You damn kids! This is my revenge that carries my 20 years of experience!

To add, breakfast will be exquisite as well! Since I can’t actually afford to make them starve, I’ll just give the one in the last place plain old porridge or something. What’ll that guy feel when he looks at the others eating good food, while he just sips on tasteless stuff, I wonder?



Things will probably turn into a full scale war in a few days. Rankings in the army is the most vicious competition for a reason. And I even made it so that you could interrupt each other!

I will destroy your teamwork, so that you will never raise a mutiny against me ever again!

Truly, this is three birds with one stone! Revenge, destroying teamwork, and making the kids try to look good in front of me! Huhahahaha!

# Chapter 1. I Didn't Know Back Then. (6)

---

1.75 Their story.

[2] 102's story.

I am the direct descendant of the Karuan Empire's Royal family, and I am also 17th in line for the next throne. If I were to speak simply, I was the 7th child of the current emperor's little brother.

Why am I here? Peasants often think that those in the royal family live a good life, but in reality, the peasants are the ones who have it easy.

They teach you a bunch of stuff just because you have royal blood, people starts forming factions in my name when I don't even want them to, and when I decided to run away from everything, they say I'm just hiding to grow in power and try to kill me...

If I were to just say the conclusion as to why I'm here, I lost in the faction war, basically.

Wait, I didn't have any faction behind me in the first place, so why'd I lose in a faction war? I don't get it. Whatever, this was what happened, so I guess I'll just live with it.

The nobles were unable to kill me because of my royal blood, and instead gave me a great mission to infiltrate into the Evil

Organization of the empire.

Hahaha... the hell? Do they think I age tens of times faster than people just because I have royal blood? What are they expecting from a fourteen year old like me?

The Evil Organization probably knows about me as well, if they aren't brainless idiots. No, perhaps the faction that sent me here told them about it?

Ah, but apparently that plan to destroy the Evil Association was for real. When the time comes, the Evil Organization's probably going to use me as a hostage, then the faction would kill me off and call me an honorable sacrifice.

I don't have any desire to die though! The ones who should die are the oldies who sent me here in the first place!

...There was a time when I thought that, but now, things are different.

I only think about a single thing nowadays.

"I can't loooossee!"

I run like there's no tomorrow. I run, and I run again.

The instructor gave us a nonsensical mission. And the

punishment for being unable to fulfill that mission was cruel. Breakfast was extremely tasty, while lunch and dinner was dull. But what, no breakfast? Are you kidding me?

Well, it's not like he's making us starve. But white porridge? What the hell? It's not tasty, nor is it nutritious! But see, you have to make someone else fail other than you to not eat that thing.

For the first few days, I restrained myself and ran leisurely.

I tried to be patient at first.

I tried to be patient when the second time rolled around as well.

It was becoming hard to be patient by the third time.

When the fourth time came, I could see myself running like there was no tomorrow.

By the fifth time, I could see that 17 was beginning to slow.

It looked like the girl had quite good stamina for a wizard, but a wizard was still a wizard. By the next day, it was possible to see her get even slower.

But I failed to realize that she was only doing this in preparation for the next day.

“Slip.”

I thought I heard wrong.

But when I saw 46 fall over in front of me, I looked back with a shocked face.

“What the hell! What’s up with that staff, damn it!”

But instead of replying, she,

“Slip.”

Cast a spell.

“Uwah!”

Once the floor became slippery, I tried to balance myself, but it failed! My butt hurt quite a bit, but I felt a sense of treachery even more in my chest.

“...This is training as well.”

“Liar! Your eyes are completely dead! You look like you’re not understanding at all what you’re doing here?”

She simply ran even as she heard my screams. And every now

and then,

“Wall.”

“Hole.”

She'd say that and make traps.

In an instant, the field turned into an obstacle field.

“...Can't lose.”

At the same time, 46 jumped over the holes and the walls, and chased 17.

“Crazy. They're all crazy.”

That's what I thought at the time. 3 days was enough to change my thought, though.

“Huaaa!”

I cut down the sand wall in front of me. Holes? Run over them! The frozen floor? Use the sword to skate over them! Why? For food!

And perhaps this was just an illusion, but at some point, I could

feel the ice cold instructor stare at us with an extremely evil face. Mm... after checking again, it seemed to be an illusion.

That instructor was definitely a demon. How is it that he stayed calm even after he put us in such a situation?!

A month has passed like so. And now, I was thinking of food more than anything else in my life.

# Chapter 1. I Didn't Know Back Then. (7)

---

Puhahahaha!

Oops, 102 stared at me with a dumb face for a moment. Back to my poker face. Back to my poker face! 102 looked at me again as if he saw a ghost, then turned back. I then proceeded to laugh even more inside. 17! You amazing bastard!

Now, everyone apart from 102 has gotten rid of their 'kid' status. They are now a proper member of the Organization.

What about 102? He's still immature. He's still not a proper villain!

102 doesn't know. He still doesn't know that I hid his longsword under 46's bed before he woke up.

102 doesn't know. He still doesn't know that 17 had cast a slip spell on his shoes so that they untied easily.

17 never missed a single breakfast for a month now. It's quite amazing. And 46! 46 had the courage to throw away her shoes the moment she found out they had a slip spell cast on them! 17 immediately began recognize 46 as an ally, not an enemy.

In other words, 102 was pretty much the person who always ate porridge.



“Now... we should start the real training.”

A month had passed already. In 2 months, the Organization would do a mandatory test on all the student. I'm not worried for the other two, but 102 is probably going to be in trouble.

His skills weren't too bad, but he's just too honest. He's probably from a fallen noble family or something. Sometimes those kind of kids come in, and they often are too honest, and get backstabbed a lot. Well, that's not the case for the guys I teach, though!

What is the reason why I'm the head instructor? I'm the head instructor because I can change young fallen nobles into a proper villain!

7 out of the 10 skilled rookies under the boss were all trained by me. I suppose that says everything.

Well, there's only 3 out of those 7 that will properly listen to me those... but those three can probably talk the other 4 into making them do what I want, so it doesn't really matter.

I'm still far away from my ultimate goal though. I just managed to train rookies! My aim is to create the boss' right arm! Even though we might look like this, we're actually the biggest Evil Organization inside the biggest nation in the world.

Where there is light, there is darkness. And it's not like that darkness will fade that easily either. There is only one reason why

I am working here in the first place!

This is a place that will never fall! In other words, I can have a job for life! I'm planning on making a council of elders or something after training a lot of core members in the organization. I'm planning on recreating that council made up of useless old men who take care of all the important decisions in novels.

If you don't understand, it's kind of like the Gorosei in One Pxxce? Mm... they actually work though. Anyway, I'd just be happy if the three generals, I mean the Organization's boss would move every time I got shit on!

Anyway, I began to work a little more, so that I could train the future's boss. Even though I look like this, I'm actually strong enough to win against a medium rank, no, a high rank knight! Hahaha! I am the master of swords!

...Well, so what? I can't use the life sword. Honestly, knights these days have pretty shit sword skills. What the hell. They just take all attacks with their armors, and go chop chop with their life sword.

Of course, sword skills matter a lot if the enemy could use the life sword as well, but it ultimately boils down to how much more energy you have.

You have nothing to say even if I use unfair ways to win! Life sword is a cheat from the very start, damn it!

I can only wait till the Organization develops a life sword neutralizer. Once it comes out... just you wait, I'm going to make as much fun of knights as I can, and go chop chop as the knights clumsily move around in their armor.

But then again, it's not like I know when it's going to be out either. Ah, I'm getting depressed again. Well, whenever I get depressed!

"5 minutes left."

"Huaa!"

There's no better way to solve depression other than to watch kids suffer!

17's magic spells begin to barrage upon 102 as he speeds up! A wall of soil appears in front of the kid! 102 slices through it! But that was a fake! There was a hole up ahead!

"U, uwah!"

"Water!"

Ohh! 3 combos! The element is different this time as well! Hoho, what a result. I didn't expect her to be able to do such a thing thanks to the training. As expected, I must be pretty awesome.

Water fell onto the kid, and the kid began to flop around in confusion. And once he escaped, 17 immediately began to throw down even more traps.

Mm... as expected, those kids learned well. They managed to figure out it was easier to take down one enemy as a group rather than to fight fairly.

Even now, 46 was running as fast as she could while dodging the holes. She was ahead of 102 by 4 laps already. She was still trying her best, despite being in the safe zone... how amazing.

“D, damn it! I, I escaped!”

“Wind, push!”

Crack!

“Wha-whoa!”

102 barely managed to escape, but 17 immediately pushed him back into the hole.

...But by the way. You said it was wind, but it actually just looked like you just beat him back into the hole with your staff?

“D, damn it, so you’re resorting to physical attacks?!”

“...It’s wind magic.”

Hoho, extra points for 17. She’s already learning how to be stubborn as a mule.

And with that, 17 begins running again! And 102 decided to give us all a good laugh by falling into a new hole right after he escaped the one he was just in, and he decided to finish off the viewers by becoming a foothold for 46 when he jumped back up.

“1 minute left.”

And in the end, 102 was the loser! This was supposed to be where I was supposed to begin real training, but I just couldn’t stop myself from seeing any more of this!

But I didn’t know back then. I didn’t know that this would be the start of competitive training in this world.

# **Chapter 2 - Uhh... Mm... What's That? Scary...**

## Chapter 2. Uhh... Mm... What's That? Scary... (1)

---

Unlike before, where I would train them viciously, feed them breakfast (of course, 102 got porridge as always), and teach them survival techniques, this time I brought the three kids to the actual drill hall.

“What the, so there was a legit drill hall here?”

Ha, I taught you up to 100 villain's tidbit tips, a survival technique in the mountains, along with the information I brought from modern times, and you still think like this?

This is why you're still a child, 102.

And for that matter.

“102, come out with your weapon.”

I gripped my wooden bat as I looked at 102 walk out with an annoyed mumble.

This wooden bat was, if I were to explain it, a bat that does not hurt its victims, but merely inflict pain onto them. A lot of pain. A shitload of pain, in fact. I hope that you, the readers, understand just how painful this thing is for me to repeat my words twice.

If it's still hard to imagine... think of it like this: the victim basically turns into a sandbag in the face of the bat.

I smirked inside when I saw 102 grumble some more after seeing the bat.

Hoho, this is an extra powerful bat that I expended my own funds into, which not only gets rid of all evidences of attacks, but even gives a massage to the victim's body. Truly, it is an amazing training tool.

But the thing is, it hurts a lot. Even the rookies that listen to me quite well turn vicious when they see me with the bat.

I decided to enlighten this poor lamb with the idea that the bat was unsurpassable unless he could completely overwhelm me in skill.

And how shall I do that? By hitting him, of course! Hoho, don't look at me like that. This is the whip of love. And after all, all famous swordsmen use something that seems harmless as their weapon.

This is especially true in the case with these old men like sword emperors or sword masters. I never heard of them using a sword. Occasionally I'd hear of them slicing entire armies with a branch, or destroying an Evil Organization with chopsticks.

So in other words, I'm doing this to train the kid to watch out for



seemingly harmless things as well! Of course, I'm just going to beat it into his body!

In order to do that, I'd have to make him more motivated first!

"If you manage to subdue me... morning practice is canceled."

I used the power of cancellation! It was super effective!

"Huaaaa!"

A left hand filled with sand appeared at the face of the foolish child who was charging straight towards me!

Why's there sand?

Paa-!

"Wh, what the?!"

To throw it, of course!

The child gets confused when he got sand in his eyes. Hoho, to think he'd fall for something so basic. This skill was something that was called "Sand Attack", which was one of the legendary skills in Pokedex that lowered accuracy by quite a bit. I managed to master this skill before I had even turned 20.

And the legendary bat that had my 20 years of experience as a villain roared at the confused child.

Crack!

“Pue?!”

It was a strange shout that seemed to be a mix of a scream and a moan. This was one of the main advantages of the bat, which was to inflict unspeakable pain unto those who were hit by it.

“U, unfa-! Puha! W, wai... Uaaa!”

He tries to speak of fairness with eyes filled with sand. Haha, he still speaks of immature things.

“Unfairness... then do you think there is a fight that is ever fair?”

“F, fight fairly!”

“Fight fairly... they’re just fancy words.”

Crack!

“Kuhaaa?!”

Hahaha, it hurts, right? It has to. I tried hitting myself as a test, and I never decided to do tests like that ever again. Well then, I'll break your fantasies along with this pain!

“Fairness. It sounds good. Yes, it truly sounds ideal. But there is no fairness in the world.”

“L, lia... kuha!”

“For example, there is the general known as Harten in the Empire. In the battle of Harken, he pushed away a large amount of soldiers to discourage the enemies from attacking the Empire.”

“S, stop hitting! Pukaa! W, while speaki-Uaaa!”

“He was known to be fair and just. But... fair? Are you kidding me? Anyone can push away an enemy with five times the amount of soldiers they have. If you want something that's really fair, you should fight on equal grounds.”

“T, this and that are differeeeeeennnnnnntttttt!”

Haha, don't try to refute your instructor, disciple. No, wait, it was all your fault for looking down on the legendary bat in the first place. Did you really think you could fight well? Come to the drill hall and fight me, then.

Crackcrackcrakittycrackcrackcrackcrackcra

Badabada boom! I played the drums with a rhythm, and kept talking.

“What is the fairness you talk of? Justice? Don’t make me laugh. Justice all changes depending on the context. The heroes all gang up on the Demon King, and call that fairness? And they always talk about unfairness when they’re the ones to get ganged up on. Hostages are unfair? The very first thing the Imperial Palace does when dealing with criminals is to take the criminal’s family as hostage. Now, back to the main talking. Spraying sand into your eyes is unfair? You must be kidding me. If that were the case, all knights who use the life sword are unfair.”

“Wh, why is thaaat! Un, unfaaaaaaaair!”

Hoho, look at this kid. His stamina’s unbelievable. He says all kinds of stuff even when he’s going through all that pain. Alright. I suppose it is fine to bestow upon you the title of the Fourth King of Constitution? Also known as Sandbag the Fourth?

“Knights all talk of their sword skills. They think they would get strong the more they perfect their sword skills. But when they become able to use the life sword? They do not care for sword skills anymore. They just try to learn fancy skills, and do not try to learn more about the life sword’s essence itself. The life sword enables one to easily train his body, easily increase his sword’s sharpness, and easily kill his enemies.”

“T, that’s talent...”

Hoho, you dare talk of talent in front of me?

Crackcrackcrack!

“Kuaaaa!”

“Talent? What is fairness to you? Is it fairness if two people tried just as hard, but lost because one was more talented? Is that what you truly think? Right, the life sword exists because of talent. It is like magic, but is completely different, making it like a completely different field of study. Right. Then do you mean that it is fine to not train your sword skills under the name of talent?”

“I, I’m not talking about thaaaaaahaaaahnnng!”

Uh, I stepped into the danger zone. That sound just now was closer to pleasure than pain. Oh shoot, I hit him too much because I got too happy about finding Sandbag the Fourth. If I hit him too much, he might actually fall into a really dangerous new world.

I stepped on the trembling boy, and kept talking.

“There is no fairness in the first place. There is no equal talent, no equal abilities, and your class is chosen the moment you are born. If you had the power to rule the world, and was of the Royal Family, you would be hailed as a holy king, but if you were of the peasant’s family, you would be marked as a seed for rebellion.”

Once I found that the two girls were staring at me, the bat, and 102 with eyes filled with fear, I immediately initiated brainwashing lesson phase one.

“There is no justice in the world. There is no evil in the world either. The opposite of justice is yet another justice, and the opposite of evil is yet another evil. There is nothing in the world without a story, and there is no action in the world that does not have a motive.”

This was my view of the world.

“What if there was a murderer who killed a single woman in front of you? Would it be alright to kill him? What if the woman was the witch who had destroyed his entire life altogether? What if she was someone who had stolen important files from the Empire? What would you do then?”

Well, this was just bullshit. 10/10, this was straight up bullshit. But sometimes, stuff like this actually happens. Then?

“W, we should listen to their story?”

17 said this carefully. 46 seemed to agree as well. Right, that’s why you’re still children. I smirked quite a bit.

“What if he had been lying? What if the woman was completely innocent?”

“W, what?!”

The girl widens her eyes and shouts. It must be nonsensical to her. Yeah, it has to be. This is wrong, and that is wrong as well.

“That’s why I said, there is no justice... there is no evil as well.”

“...Why does that matter?”

46 asks this with a confused face.

“There is no justice. Those who talk of it are just trying to convince others that what they’re doing is not wrong. Look at the Empire, for example. It is the strongest nation in the world, and it is also a place with 700 years of experience. It even has two subordinate countries under it. Truly, it is an amazing nation.”

In order to make things easier to understand, I raise the reputation of the Empire as much as I can. Seeing a 1st place fall to 4th place all of the sudden brings more shock than seeing a 10th place fall to 11th place, after all.

“Do you know the origin of this Empire? It is actually quite simple. A single peasant went against the Imperial Palace and revolted. He gathered comrades and destroyed corruption, and created this nation.”

“A, and therefor, he’s just... kahak!”

I step on 102 even harder than before. Huh, look at this boy’s regeneration rate.

“But what they did was ultimately a revolt.”

“N, no! At the time! There was only corruption!”

“Then are you telling me there is no corruption in the Imperial Palace as of now?”

“...That’s...”

Hoho, looks like I was right about him being from a fallen noble family. He talks like a patriot, then immediately shuts up when facing stuff like this.

“There is still corruption. There is corruption in any nation of the world. Even the Empire that was created to get rid of corruption is corrupt. Now, I speak again: is the Empire good, or evil?”

“...Evil?”

I smirked when I heard 17’s response.



“Then is this organization, which trains orphans then uses them like tools, just?”

“.....”

“This is why justice and evil cannot coexist. If the Empire is just, this Organization is just as well, and if the Empire is evil, this organization is evil as well. What’s important is the importance of an individual. Do you get sad if someone dies? No. What if it’s a close friend of yours? You’d be sad. You’d be enraged. Right. That’s it. It just depends on whether you know the person or not.”

Haha, I dislike black/white theories. I tend to look at the world in a grey manner instead. Why? It’s a grey area. Because it’s a grey area, it’s hard to tell if the things you do are actually evil or not. An opportunist must always look at the world in a grey fashion. Otherwise you’d die when one side falls. Well, if I were to put it nicely, it’s like taking the middle path, and if I were to put it badly, two timing?

“Then... what must we do...”

“Decide for yourself. Do not think about justice or evil. Judgement? What a joke. Whether it be a king killing a slave, or a murderer killing a normal man, it’s both murder. But the Empire says that it is alright for an emperor to kill inferior humans, while it is evil for a murderer to kill a normal man. This is the reality of the Empire’s laws. But do you think you, who lived a little more than a decade, can judge this 700 year old system? Don’t joke with me. You’re not gods. No, even if you are, you still have no right to judge others.”

It might be heresy, but whatever. I've been shitting on gods and elementals as much as I could ever since I came here. Those bastards. They never bothered giving me a single buff when I came here.

“Have a desire of your own. Take what you want. Protect what you need to protect. You want to save someone? Save him. You want to kill someone? Kill him. Do not base your morals around what the world tells you. The world is the people, and the people are just numbers. They talk of justice just because they are the majority. I refuse to believe that I teach idiots who listen to those monkeys.”

Uhahaha! Well, honestly, the only thing that you have to protect is my old age. In other words, just ignore the kind folk for the sake of my retirement!

After a few more “lessons”, my worldview will invade their minds amidst the pain and chaos! They will no longer think of being in the Organization as a bad thing!

I smiled evilly inside as I looked at the three kids who were thinking seriously to themselves, and kept talking with a cold face.

“Next, 17.”

“Y, yes!”

She seems to be saying “Me as well?” Yeah, it gets annoying if you just dwell on my worldview, so... let’s beat you up a bit first, yeah?

# Chapter 2. Uhh... Mm... What's That? Scary... (2)

---

## 2.25 Their Story

[1] Raina Rel Swin: What the hell, that hurts!

Today, too, I was served porridge.

And that day, I thought of the pain of being unable to eat the delicious food in front of me. I thought of the humiliation that I had to take by eating porridge.

While I ate porridge with an annoyed face, the instructor spoke.

“Come to the drill hall by 10 once you finish eating.”

The only thing that I did the past month was to learn survival techniques, and do basic strength training.

A drill hall... I thought that we would finally learn something useful. Seriously, why would a survival technique be useful to me? I'd have little to no chance of running away if something happened here, as I would be a prioritized target.

I cautiously moved to the drill hall with my beloved sword in hand.

There are no allies here. This is a place full of demons.

Putting trust and faith into your teammates? Don't joke with me. My last hope, 17, realized that she couldn't beat 46, and began to attack me as well. She interferes with me from the start to the end, and creates all kinds of traps to put me in danger.

Nowadays... I'm afraid of women. They're seriously scary. At first, my heart thumped a little when I saw beautiful women, but now, it's beating faster than ever. It's not a dokun dokun, it's a boom boom boom boom. It's probably because I get into life-death situations near them.

And soon, I arrived at the drill hall. Its walls were arranged in a circular manner through the use of stone walls, and there were various weapons on one side of the wall.

“What the, so there was a legit drill hall here?”

What the hell, I thought he was just going to do something ridiculous because there was no drill hall.

As I thought that, the instructor began to talk looking straight at me.

“102, come out with your weapon.”

As he said this, he took out a small club from his waist. It's size was... about as big as my leg? It was a little too big to call it small, but it was a little too small for a staff. It seemed a little bigger than a normal sword.

But what? He's using a club instead of a wooden sword? Are you kidding me?

When I took out my sword with such a complaint, the instructor spoke words that were like the devil's temptation.

“If you manage to subdue me... morning practice is canceled.”

“Huaaa!”

Was this what the berserker spell was like? I ran forward without thinking anything.

And.

Paa-!

“Wh, what the?!”

I, I can't see! No, before that, my eye hurts!

And as I tried to say something.

Crack!

“Pue?!”

The thing that seemed to be the club hit me. It was a shout that seemed to be a mix between a scream and a moan! I shouted as I felt an unspeakably large amount of pain.

“U, unfa-! Puha! W, wai... Uaaa!”

A cold voice responded to me when I said that.

“Unfairness... then do you think there is a fight that is ever fair?”

“F, fight fairly!”

“Fight fairly... they’re just fancy words.”

Crack!

“Kuhaaa?!”

The instructor responds, but the club does not stop. The pain penetrated through the bones! It felt like I was hit in the waist, but the pain spreads to the rest of the body.

W, what the hell?! Hurts! Hurts a lot!

The instructor kept on denying what I said about fairness as he gave me more pain.

“Fairness. It sounds good. Yes, it truly sounds ideal. But there is no fairness in the world.”

“L, lia... kuha!”

“For example, there is the general known as Harten in the Empire. In the battle of Harken, he pushed away a large amount of soldiers to discourage the enemies from attacking the Empire.”

H, how's that related!

“S, stop hitting! Pukaa! W, while speaki-Uaaa!”

“He was known to be fair and just. But... fair? Are you kidding me? Anyone can push away an enemy with five times the amount of soldiers they have. If you want something that's really fair, you should fight on equal grounds.”

“T, this and that are differeeeennnnnnntttttt!”

No, in the first place, fairness doesn't even matter! Just stop this pain!



Crackcrackcrakittycrackcrackcrackcrackcra

I was about to faint from the strange rhythmic strikes. But why is that I was still able to hear the instructor's words clearly?

“What is the fairness you talk of? Justice? Don't make me laugh. Justice all changes depending on the context. The heroes all gang up on the Demon King, and call that fairness? And they always talk about unfairness when they're the ones to get ganged up on. Hostages are unfair? The very first thing the Imperial Palace does when dealing with criminals is to take the criminal's family as hostage. Now, back to the main talking. Spraying sand into your eyes is unfair? You must be kidding me. If that were the case, all knights who use the life sword are unfair.”

“Wh, why is thaaat! Un, unfaaaaaaaair!”

I keep trying to tell him to stop, but my mouth is saying something different. What the hell?! Why am I like this?! Am I going mad from pain?

“Knights all talk of their sword skills. They think they would get strong the more they perfect their sword skills. But when they become able to use the life sword? They do not care for sword skills anymore. They just try to learn fancy skills, and do not try to learn more about the life sword's essence itself. The life sword enables one to easily train his body, easily increase his sword's sharpness, and easily kill his enemies.”

I know that much. Talent is more important than sword skills.

Even if your sword skills are bad, if you are talented in using the life sword, your life is all set.

“T, that’s talent...”

Crackcrackcrack!

“Kuaaa!”

I thought we were taking a break, and then I got hit again! And it hurts even more than before?!

“Talent? What is fairness to you? Is it fairness if two people tried just as hard, but lost because one was more talented? Is that what you truly think? Right, the life sword exists because of talent. It is like magic, but is completely different, making it like a completely different field of study. Right. Then do you mean that it is fine to not train your sword skills under the name of talent?”

“I, I’m not talking about thaaaaaahaaaahnnng!”

I can’t even scream anymore. No, well... It still hurts, but... something feels weird at the same time? D, dangerous! I feel like I’m going somewhere dangerous!

The instructor seemed to have sensed something as well, and stepped on me instead of hitting me.

“There is no fairness in the first place. There is no equal talent, no equal abilities, and your class is chosen the moment you are born. If you had the power to rule the world, and was of the Royal Family, you would be hailed as a holy king, but if you were of the peasant’s family, you would be marked as a seed for rebellion.”

I’m becoming unconscious, and yet I can still hear well. I felt like fainting several times already, but my consciousness gets clearer instead. What the, scary!

“There is no justice in the world. There is no evil in the world either. The opposite of justice is yet another justice, and the opposite of evil is yet another evil. There is nothing in the world without a story, and there is no action in the world that does not have a motive.”

No, there is justice in this world. There is evil as well. Justice is to have that demonic stick disappear, and evil is that stick itself. That is the weapon of the devil. No, that is something that not even the demon king would dare use.

“What if there was a murderer who killed a single woman in front of you? Would it be alright to kill him? What if the woman was the witch who had destroyed his entire life altogether? What if she was someone who had stolen important files from the Empire? What would you do then?”

It is simple. You just have to beat them with the stick. Then they will say the truth.

17, who did not realize this yet, answered with a trembling voice.

“W, we should listen to their story?”

“What if he had been lying? What if the woman was completely innocent?”

“W, what?!”

I’m telling you, just beat them with the stick.

“That’s why I said, there is no justice... there is no evil as well.”

“...Why does that matter?”

“There is no justice. Those who talk of it are just trying to convince others that what they’re doing is not wrong. Look at the Empire, for example. It is the strongest nation in the world, and it is also a place with 700 years of experience. It even has two subordinate countries under it. Truly, it is an amazing nation.”

I know that well. Even though I look like this, I am the nephew of the emperor of this nation. Well, he was one of the reasons who put me over here, though. He said something about lions pushing off their own cubs off a cliff on purpose? I’m not even a lion... no, in the first place, why would you push a cub off a cliff?

As I complained in my head, the instructor scanned us children

again, and kept talking.

“Do you know the origin of this Empire? It is actually quite simple. A single peasant went against the Imperial Palace and revolted. He gathered comrades and destroyed corruption, and created this nation.”

“A, and therefor, he’s just... kahak!”

H, hurts! Can’t I even respond?!

“But what they did was ultimately a revolt.”

“N, no! At the time! There was only corruption!”

“Then are you telling me there is no corruption in the Imperial Palace as of now?”

“...That’s...”

Eh, I can’t refute that. I wouldn’t be here if there was no corruption in the first place. The imperial palace is actually pretty shit, considering how everyone talks about how you’re going to kill someone after you insult the person once.

“There is still corruption. There is corruption in any nation of the world. Even the Empire that was created to get rid of corruption is corrupt. Now, I speak again: is the Empire good, or

evil?”

“...Evil?”

That’s not true.

“Then is this organization, which trains orphans then uses them like tools, just?”

Nope.

“.....”

“This is why justice and evil cannot coexist. If the Empire is just, this Organization is just as well, and if the Empire is evil, this organization is evil as well. What’s important is the importance of an individual. Do you get sad if someone dies? No. What if it’s a close friend of yours? You’d be sad. You’d be enraged. Right. That’s it. It just depends on whether you know the person or not.”

“Then... what must we do...”

“Decide for yourself. Do not think about justice or evil. Judgement? What a joke. Whether it be a king killing a slave, or a murderer killing a normal man, it’s both murder. But the Empire says that it is alright for an emperor to kill inferior humans, while it is evil for a murderer to kill a normal man. This is the reality of the Empire’s laws. But do you think you, who lived a little more than a decade, can judge this 700 year old system? Don’t joke with

me. You're not gods. No, even if you are, you still have no right to judge others."

Ohh! Nice! So stop stepping on me already! So stop being a hypocrite already!

"Have a desire of your own. Take what you want. Protect what you need to protect. You want to save someone? Save him. You want to kill someone? Kill him. Do not base your morals around what the world tells you. The world is the people, and the people are just numbers. They talk of justice just because they are the majority. I refuse to believe that I teach idiots who listen to those monkeys."

My desire is already decided. My desire is to not get hit by that club, my wish is to use that club, and what I must protect is my body that is being abused by that club.

Once I made my resolution, I made an evil grin after hearing the instructor's next words.

"Next, 17."

Huhuhuhuhu, hahahahaha!

"Y, yes!"

I have been freed!

And as I heard the screams coming from the other side, I made an oath to myself.

...I shall never be hit by that thing ever again!



## Chapter 2. Uhh... Mm... What's That? Scary... (3)

---

I'm pretty amazing.

The result of the training? The effects of the bat were truly magical.

What should I say... it's like a martial artist gaining an enlightenment in xianxia novels?

Tyranny really is the best. But one thing that's worrying me is... they're doing so well that I can't really make use of the bat... Hum, hum, I mean, I'm really sad that humans are only able to work hard when punishment is involved. That's really the case, I swear. I'm definitely not disappointed that I don't get to hit them as much.

...Sorry. It sounds like an excuse to me, too.

Anyway, as I trained these children, I was able to find out their specialties.

Omnipotence (noun), to have the quality of superiority in all things.

It's awesome. You can do this, you can do that, etc etc. But how many are there in the world who are omnipotent? In the past, that

is, in the previous world, you needed to learn computers, English, Chinese, work... it was a harsh world.

And even when you learn all that, you can't even get employed...

By the way, learning stuff like that's super inefficient. They have departments, right? You just gotta know what you specialize in, right? So why do everyone demand so much from you? Why can't we all just focus on our specialties?

Omnipotence is good, but most end up becoming a jack of all trades. Things actually work pretty similarly to the other world around here. But would I have become the head instructor if I worked like everyone else? No!

I help people dig into their specialties. How? With the bat! Talent grows with the bat! How about people who bats don't work on? Yeah, there are sometimes those who are immune to the bat.

But... if the iron bat appears?

The master craftsman dwarves who worked in the creation of the iron bat declared that they had created the weapon of the devil, and listed it as the 2nd strongest demonic weapon the dwarves had ever created.

The 1st strongest demonic weapon of the dwarves is actually listed in the 10 strongest demonic weapons in the continent, so I think that says quite a bit about this bat.

Mm... but taking that out would mean that I would have to give up on my humanity, so I never used it save for that one occasion 9 years ago.

Anyway, there's a solution for everything.

And the kids this time are all really distinct.

The first is 102! (He escaped the title of a child a while back)

He's like a knight. A goody two shoes... Boring. But he's learning little by little. He does everything pretty well. If I work him well, he's going to be omnipotent! Because of that, he's getting a lot of love from the bat at the moment!

Second, 46!

I'm planning on making use of her perseverance and reflexes to raise her as an assassin.

What's hard about assassination is that you may have to stay in cover for 5, 10 years. It needs perseverance! This girl almost seems like she was born to be an assassin.

Lastly, 17! Everyone probably knows at this point, but this girl's totally a wizard. The fact that she can change elements is a big plus!

Unlike in fantasy novels, there are no incantations in this world. Incantations are just there to visualize the spell. When you think about it, there are a lot of incantations in novels, but who the hell came up with the incantations? What kind of a chuuni came up with those incantations?! It either came about when a talented chuuni said “Fire! Decimate my enemies!” and actually killed someone, or if that wasn’t the case, it would mean that someone was trying to find incantations when no one even knew magic existed... especially high ranked magic, how would you find incantations for that? It’s super long.

Here, in the actual fantasy world, it’s not words that do the work, it’s your imagination.

Because of that, the 3 major parts of magic here is the contract, imagination, and concentration. Of course, you’d need talent to even use magic. The more talented you are, the more energy you would be able to use.

But talent is talent. It is just one of the small annoyances that exist in the world.

Because of that, as long as you can use the 3 major parts well, magic is a pretty nice subject to take up.

First, imagination.

It is to draw images in your head. Magic is a subject of mysteries, but it is also a subject that requires one to know the mysteries of

the magic itself.

That's why changing elements is a hard thing to do. Can you imagine a situation where it's snowing, but the temperature is 40 degrees Celsius? You can easily imagine it, but what if you were to make it come true? As long as you're thinking something along the lines of "no way..." in a corner of your head, magic is impossible.

Holy magic isn't called magic for nothing. It's a magic where you imagine a miracle happening, and the gods grant the miracle to you. Your faith would be a big bonus here. Holy miracles don't happen when you're atheist, you know.

Second, concentration.

If imagination triggers magic, concentration requires you to maintain that imagination. If I were to put it simply, imagination is a gas burner, and concentration is butane gas? Lighting a fire is important, but maintaining that fire is important as well. If you don't get it, your magical talent is zero!

Lastly, contract.

It's an ability that doesn't require talent, but rather charm and talking skills. Just like the name says, you're trying to make a contract.

A heaven sent talent? Try fighting with a 1000 year old demon,

then. You die. This simple reason is why contracts are one of the three major parts of magic. Of course, if you delve deep enough, it's probably the hardest part of the three. If you make a mistake, your soul gets taken, and your family could be slaves for generations.

But, if you do it well? You get a nice slave!

And for that reason.

“Today, we shall contract a demon.”

I'm thinking of testing out a theory.

“...Isn't that illegal?”

17, the future evil archmage, rejected my idea. Hey, that hasn't happened in a while, did it?

Also, what was that about illegal? If you're going to talk about legality... this whole organization's illegal...

Well, it wouldn't look cool if I responded like that, so...

“Why would you think it's illegal?”

When I lowered my voice and said this, 17 mumbled quietly.

“Because you would be selling your soul...”

“Then why are there those who contracted demons in the empire?”

“That’s...”

There are only two reasons why demons are called demons. They are too powerful, and they want your soul in exchange for their power.

The representative demons of this world are the 72 demon kings of Solomon, the demon of the Qliphoth Tree, the demons of ragnarok, etc etc. It’s all full of familiar names. And the abilities and personalities are similar as well!

Because of this fact, I know more about demons than some demon scholars in the empire.

And now, it’s time to test my theory! If I do this wrong, 17 will lose her soul, but I’m too curious to care! Honestly, it’s going to be a while till I find someone this talented again!

“I’m saying this again, but one of the 3 major parts of magic is the contract. And summoned monsters are the only ones that requires contracts.”

“What does that matter?”

“What is a contract? It is a trade. I’ll give you my this, so you give me your that. And most contracts with demons are scams.”

“Why is it a scam?”

“A soul is something that not even gods can touch. It is something only the real god who created both gods and demons can touch. That is the price for lending a mere strength of a demon? It’s a joke.”

“...mere strength?”

“Compared to a soul, yes. It’s shit. A demon’s strength? Yeah, it’s amazing. But even gods become limited in strength in this world. But demons? They are different. They can use as much power as they want. Why is that? It’s simple. They have your soul. A soul is that powerful.”

“Then...”

“Yes, it’s possible to form a contract with a demon. They get weaker as a result, but a demon is a demon. It’s still extremely powerful. But they are extremely hard to form contracts with, and even the empire has a percentage nearing zero when it comes to contracting demons.”

“Can I even do something that dangerous?”



Yeah, it's a bit dangerous. After all, the empire gets screwed if they fail to form a contract. But.

“You can.”

I said this with a small smile. She can do it. If I make use of the theory that I formed using the summoned pose that demon kings make, she can do it! Maybe... Mm, since it's just a theory, my trust in it's going down a bit.

But if this succeeds? We'll have a great demon as a slave!

Perhaps she sensed my confidence. 17 thought a bit for a moment, then answered confidently.

“...I'll do it!”

# Chapter 2. Uhh... Mm... What's That? Scary... (4)

---

## 2.5 Their Story

[2]Nermia El Ria: ...What the...

I moved to the summoning circle prepared by the instructor.

Honestly

I'm a bit scared. Demon... Can I summon something that gets rarely summoned even in the empire? Me, a child who's a little older than 10 years old?

There were all kinds of thoughts in my head, but... there was still no contact from the family. I've been trying to search rumors, but I got nothing.

And... I was unable to disobey the instructor. If that accursed club appeared again...

Gulp.

When I threw out the thought about the club with a shiver, I was able to see my surroundings. In the forest, there was a blood-red magic circle drawn on a wooden floor. And the instructor... lifted the floor?

“W, what is this?”

There was a stone plate beneath the floor. And there was an ancient incantation written on it. The instructor did not even glance at me as he responded.

“As I said before, selling your soul is a total scam.”

“Right...”

Just where was he going with this? The instructor soon answered that with a shocking response.

“That would mean scams are possible when it comes to contracts... if I were to put it simply, us humans can scam demons as well.”

“N, no way.”

That was impossible. Demons and the demon race don't get classified differently for nothing. Demons are beings that rival gods. It would be impossible to fool them.

“Right, it seems impossible. There's no way to scam a demon. At least, there's no way to scam them by ourselves.”

“What do you mean?”

“We do not scam them. The demon will scam itself for us.”

I was only able to realize what that meant later.

## 2.5 Their Story

[2.5]The Great Demon’s Story: ...What the...

A being that ends worlds.

The demon that dominates fire.

The master of giants that even gods fear.

The lord of Muspelheim, Sutr.

That was who I was.

And I was...

“Bored.”

Really bored. If I move, wars begin. Because of that, all sorts of things try to restrict me. Since my existence itself spells

destruction, I can't move unless a human forms a contract with me.

But just who would make a contract with me... No, is there even a way to contact me at this point?

When I think about several Great Demons besides me, it seems unlikely that a method to summon me exists in the mortal realm.

Why do I know this? Because I heard humans destroyed all methods to contact Great Demons like me for being too powerful!

Because of that, I'm bored!

I might even take just half a soul to lend my strength!

Was it because of my desperation?

"T, this is?!"

A contact from a summoning circle... It's been 2000 years!

I quickly accepted the summon, struck the ground with my hand and shouted.

"Puhahaha! Are you the ones who summoned me, the master of Muspelheim?"

And I looked at the man and the child who seemed to have summoned me. Mm... the man seems to not have summoned me. No, he wouldn't even be able to... it's almost like the mana of this world refuses to near his soul.

The child nodded at me. And.

“Will you form a contract with me?”

Form a contract? Of course!

“Yes, I will! But, the cost will be!”

Your soul, of course! The moment I was about to say that, the man smiled evilly, and opened his mouth.

“Nothing.”

What the f... the hell?

## Chapter 2. Uhh... Mm... What's That? Scary... (5)

---

Puhahaha! I, I did it! I, I'm a genius?! Ah... I'm afraid. I'm afraid of my own talent! Let's think. Most contracts formed with demons and other summoned beings are done orally. The effect? It is absolute!

But let's think about humans. There is a need to obey an oral contract, but most people don't obey it. That's why we created written contracts. Then? What if we use written contracts on summoned beings?

Once I thought of this, I realized something.

The way most demons come out when summoned are extremely similar! Of course, it varies a little by little, but it's usually very similar!

If I were to use an example, Sutr appears by striking the floor with his hand. A demon like Fenrir would appear howling at the sky, and Jormungandr apparently covers the sky with its giant body and looks down on the darkened world. The summoning circles for these Great Demons mostly disappeared, but since the way low class demons were summoned were mostly similar, I thought it would be the same for these guys.

And out of these great demons, Sutr is the easiest to scam!

He hits the floor when he appears. Then, what if we put a written contract on a stone plate below the floor? And what if we modified the floor a bit so that when it breaks, it puts ink on your hands?

The contract would be sealed the moment you're summoned. Honestly, even I wasn't sure if this ridiculous tactic would work, but it worked!

Like this, a ridiculous contract was formed.

"W, what? obey the contractor completely? The reward for doing so is being summoned in this world? W, what?! I can't kill or destroy without explicit permission from the contractor? H, how much power do you think you'd be able to get from me like this?!" This is a den of thieves!

The more power you want, the bigger the reward has to be. In other words, the smaller the reward, the smaller the power. Of course, this can mostly be covered up by the power of the contractor, but this kid's barely over 10. If she wants to use all of Sutr's power, she'd need 10 years, no, perhaps the rest of her life to be qualified.

But it's Sutr, right? The guy who ended Nordic Mythology? How am I supposed to earn money if a demon that strong's walking around destroying everything? Wait, would I even be alive in the first place? That's why it's important to seal the demon's power! Of course, I made sure that I'd be safe in the contract. But I still wouldn't be able to live if the world ended, right? That means that I'd have to save it.



...I finally became a hero that saved the world?!

“T, this is a scam! N, no way this is possible!”

“It’s nothing compared to you, though?”

“What do you mean?!”

“You take souls, right?”

“.....”

He shut up. Of course he would. Taking a soul is that big of a deal. It’s better for a god to take a single soul, rather than gain thousands of followers.

I said this before, but the basics of this world’s magic start from imagination. That means that the power of gods originate from imagination as well. Of course, gods are strong from the start, but when followers imagine a god in his/her full glory, the god’s rank would rise as a result.

But if a demon were to take a soul? It would get more power than taking in thousands of disciples.

When one’s rank rises, he/she would get stronger. Even a human could become infinitely close to a god.

And souls are something governed by the one god that created everything.

You'd take something like that just by lending a bit of your power? It's like exchanging a diamond for a cookie.

Towards a scammer like that, I don't feel bad at all for scamming them. Well, it isn't like I feel remorse anyway. I'm a villain, after all.

"...Instructor, is this... really it?"

"Yes. That demon sealed the contract, and accepted it himself. The deed is done."

"D, don't kid! I, I didn't..."

I cut off the enraged demon in that instant.

"You don't need to agree to it."

There are three interesting systems in this world. The first system is the soul, the second is the game system the creation god authorized, and the third would be that.

"Your permission is dictated by the Geass Roll." I don't like this...  
this is not the original translator's site!

Geass Roll. The third major part of magic, the contract, is one of the 5 things that form this world. And this contract is connected to the world in a special way that allows the world to authorize any magical contracts are formed. This process would be called the “Geass Roll”.

“N, no way...”

The demon king spoke with a defeated voice. he might’ve been a demon king back then, but now he’s just a slave!

Huhahahahaha! Puhahahahaha! With this, my position in the organization should shoot up! I would be promoted! My salary will rise!

“N, no way! No waaayyyyyyy~~~”

No way? Way!

# Chapter 2. Uhh... Mm... What's That? Scary... (6)

---

## 2.5 Their Story

[2.75]A Certain Organization's Story: Dangerous.

In a dark room, a few people were gathered around a table.

“Too dangerous.”

“Agreed.”

Everyone made a worried face as they stared at a single document.

“Even if it's restricted, Sutr...”

“A demon symbolizing the end of the world. A contract with that...”

“...Too dangerous.”

Demons were all extremely dangerous beings. And Sutr was one of the most dangerous of these demons, as the being who killed gods and ended the world.

The demon that rules Muspelheim, and burned the world.

His accomplishments were enough to outshine even the strongest of the demons.

While the organization technically earned themselves immense power...

“Why did instructor Naruan summon something like that for the direct descendant of the Nermia Family?”

The problem was, the one who made the contract with the demon was the descendent of the Nermia Family, who the organization was currently on as an enemy. It was more likely that the demon would work to destroy the organization rather than help it.

“It really is like instructor Naruan, but...”

“Does he have an ulterior motive? 2 of the 3 he took in were in the blacklist.”

“No, instructor Naruan usually takes in those that are in the blacklist.”

Everyone’s gaze pointed to a single person. It was a woman with silver hair, and red eyes. The woman felt the gaze, covered her mouth, and smiled.

“Hoho... teacher does have some strange preferences.”

This woman was one of the 10 top rookies that Naruan trained, and an elite that took the second spot of the information department of the organization.

“I know that you handed out the information that the two children that came in were in the blacklist.”

“Yes, of course. We stole several things from the Raina Family and the Nermia Family in the past. There’s no way we wouldn’t know about their descendants.”

This would be something that would make Naruan go, “I never heard of something like that though?!” , but everyone in the room saw this as in obvious fact.

“How high is the likelihood that Naruan is planning on betraying us?”

“He may be my teacher, but... it’s not like there’s no chance. After all, he’s... not someone befitting of a villain.”

This would be something that would make Sutr become enraged, but no one in the room disagreed with the statement.

“Right... but it’s not like he’s a hero, either.”

“It’s not that he has no reason to betray us, though. If there is justice, there is no evil. If there is evil, there is no justice. He does not approve of justice, but he does not approve of evil, either. To a man with a grey worldview, he may be in the world of black, but he may be in the world of white as well.”

“...Well, that’s what teacher is like.”

After a while of talking, Naruan was marked as a potential target like his students.

And when the meeting was adjourned, the silver haired woman quietly smiled.

“Hoho... I can monitor him freely now, right?” I don't like this... this is not the original translator's site!

## Chapter 2. Uhh... Mm... What's That? Scary... (7)

---

What the, a chill ran down my spine for a second...

Then, I realized... I was finally old now!

Aah... it feels sad knowing that I am old.

32 years in my previous life, and 41 in this life. In total, it's 73... Hoho, I'm old now... but this damn job doesn't even get me pension... NO, before that, there'd be about 10 disciples of mine that would cause a mutiny if I retire... So scary. I can't retire that way. Phew... come to think of it, I didn't even train 20 students yet, so doesn't that make it so that most of my students would cause a mutiny if I retire?!

“...Instructor?”

I can see a little girl look at me with a tilted head below me. She seems quite cute like this, but... She's the most dangerous out of all of them! And now that she ate quite a bit, she looks healthier than before. That means that she's stronger than before?!

What am I talking about, you ask? Why would she be stronger when she eats?

It would be good if your mental strength was strong in this



world, but it can only be strong if your body was strong to a degree as well.

How should I say it, if your body is healthy, your mind is healthy? If I were to put it different, let's say you have a really good mp3 file. But if your music player is crap, you would end up listening to shit music.

It's the same for this thing. Her mind was powerful, but her body was weak. And right now, 46 was at tip top condition!

It's now the perfect time to teach her my sword arts, but I'm pretty scared. This girl is the type of person who would try to kill me with my own sword arts.

How do I know that? There was a person like this before. Super scary. She listens to me well, but she always looks for a chance. She always grasps one of my arms when walking, and keeps trying to get my guard down by saying that she likes me.

Mn? You think she might actually like me? Think a bit, then. How would you like someone that beat you every day? What the hell, is she an M? What? Isn't that scarier?! Pervert!

Mm... Anyway, the biggest proof would be the fact that the third generation of my disciples was the generation with the most amount of mutinies After all, that generation was the one where the metal bat appeared.

“Instructor?”

I made up my mind as I looked at 46.

“I will teach you how to use the sword from now.”

“...Alright.”

...Ok, from today on, I’m putting a steel plate on my stomach for insurance!

## 2.5 Their Story

[3]Mirua: ...Amazing.

“I will teach you how to use the sword from now.”

With that, I began to learn how to use the sword.

The training where we ran around the field continued, but after breakfast, I stopped training with the other kids.

While the instructor taught the other kids personally, we would go through self training. Of course, if you play... the feared club would come out.

When we first fought the instructor, I became afraid of death, but I still did not cry. But when I got hit by the club... I threw away my last pride as I hid in a corner and cried.

What should I say... that thing's a demonic weapon. Not even the strongest demonic weapon is as powerful as that thing. Instant death is better than eternal pain, after all.

I'd rather die than feel that pain ever again.

And after learning sword arts for a few days, I realized something.

This man... is an unsurpassable wall.

The sword arts that he taught was simple. There was no change in it. But there was no weakness in it either.

A sword arts of one hit, one kill. Nothing else is needed. Not even power, nor profound movements can beat that simpleness.

Once I realized this, I became afraid.

Can I... Can I achieve my vengeance here? If just the instructor was this strong, how much can I damage the organization?

Unlike my thoughts, my body carefully executes the sword moves that I have been taught. An evil art that only aimed to kill. But it

was also something more beautiful than anything else I had seen before.

It was something that was simple, but that simpleness only served to make this sword arts harder to use. It was a perfect example that showed that simple things were the most profound things in the world. I became entranced in the moves that the instructor had shown me, and began to follow them carefully.

The hell... these kids are scary...

My body's executing the moves that I had practiced in the past, but my head is on full alert.

Did I... think wrongly? Did this girl get blessed by gods and demons alike? How the hell is she getting into a trance already?!

I was just farming when I was her age, you know? They say children absorb knowledge like sponge, but how the hell is that girl following my moves with a sword that's too heavy for her? She's stealing my Battle Sword Arts that I developed through the course of 20 years!

I might actually be sucked dry at this rate?!

Of course, the Battle Sword Arts, which was something commonly called the Life-Death Sword Arts by the mercenaries, was simple. Whenever a person who never learned high class sword arts somehow survived in battle, and when this experience

stacks, you become knowledgeable in how to kill. The sword art that is compiled from these experiences is called the Life-Death Sword Arts, and when I came into the organization, I compiled all those random sword arts into one art known as the Battle Sword Arts.

But... the sword arts that I made after a shitload of research is?! The one thing I relied on to protect myself is?! W, what do I do? I have to train these kids for 5 years. I thought I'd be stronger than them till the end... I might actually be killed before the end?! Holy shit, scary!

And after a few training sessions, I became confident in the fact that... I, I might actually die!

I thought the girl got a fortuitous event or something at first, but... the next day, she seemed extremely comfortable when it came to using the sword.

Right. In the end, this sword arts was a Life-Death Sword Arts! It required a person to know the arts by heart. But that girl got in a trance every day, and ended up trying to modify it to fit her more.

...In conclusion, I got sucked dry. I got sucked dry! One of my 7 life insurances is gone!!

Calm down, calm down... It wasn't my retirement insurance anyway... I just got robbed of my method of protection... Ah... I'm depressed...

Anyway... what's up with kids these days? I have nothing to teach. They just fall into a trance the moment I begin to teach them.

This was something that famous swordsmen did every once in a while though? Do they have meds for something like this nowadays?

Back then, I didn't know. I didn't know that these kids were monsters. Once I realized that, it was too late. This is a den of thieves!

# **Chapter 3 - Aah... I'm Screwed...**

# Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (1)

---

Mm... It's been 3 years since I began to teach these bastards.

What happened during those 3 years?

“Diieeeee!”

“...I don't wanna.”

“Judgement of the Earth!”

Hohoho, the traditional game of breakfast begins. The funny thing is, the amount of laps they have to run is now less.

But? As you can see, there are stone spears coming out of the ground, and the life sword flies around everywhere.

At the same time, the former demon king (he's just a slave now) Sutr, and various demons and elementals go wild here.

Hahaha... What the hell is this bs? Is food that important... They already passed the crazy third generation? Aah... I want to see the previous generations. They were super nice...

-Kuooooo!



“Holy crap! You bastard! You actually unsealed his mana?”

“...Unfair.”

“This is my power! I shall go all out now!”

17 unsealed Sutr’s power. Well, it was still restricted, but it was still the power of a Great Demon. It was easy for it to turn the surrounding area to a sea of fire.

-I’ll kill all of youuuuu!

And the giant, no, the demon that used to be a sandbag tried to go wild. But then.

“Freeze.”

“Freeze.”

-Kueeee! C, colddd

The other kids began to use novice, well, it’s only novice magic compared to 17. Their magic’s actually enough to beat just about any novice magician from the magic tower.

...bastards. I was unable to use the life sword and magic for 44 years here. No, if I add my previous life, it’s 76 years. Bastards!

I would be a great wizard if I was able to use magic at this point. Could it be that the gods sealed my magic because I would be capable of destroying the world?

Aah, I'm pissed. Let's let off some steam.

"We're finishing in 1 minute."

"""Dieeeeeee!"""

Hoho, there's fire everywhere, and the kids are fighting to the death. How fun...

"The kids are quite talented."

I flinched inside when I heard a familiar voice behind me, but I pretended to be calm and looked back.

"You were like that too once, Cia."

"Hohoho, they look like they're having a lot more fun than us, though?"

Harnel Rel Cia. She's one of the kids from the 3rd generation, and right now she basically leads the information department of the Organization.

She came under my wing when the organization began to kill potential targets in their midst 3 years ago.

I thought that she would take revenge on me for the training I put her through, but she hasn't done anything in the last 3 years... I'm super scared. She could honestly turn me into a target in an instant.

Since the third generation had a taste of the metal bat... since they got beat up by something like that... they might all try to kill me. I'd probably want to kill if I were to be hit by that, too.

Did the girl even know my concerns? She just looked at me with a smile. This is a den of thieves!

“Eh~ teacher, there's a pretty girl like me near you, you know? Why put on such a stiff face?”

“...I am your instructor.”

“Tch, you're always like that... Ah, by the way, the device that restricts the Life Sword is finally being tested. Want one?”

“...Really?”

I thought I was going to have a heart attack for a second. What, t, the thing is finally coming out?!

“Well, it takes a long time to set up, and it breaks easily, but it’s better than not having it. It’s not actually that useful, but it can potentially take down a monster like the sword saint under the right conditions.” I don't like this... this is not the original translator's site!

Hohoho, I’d be able to take down the sword saint... T, this is amazing!

I saw a sword saint in the past. The thing ain’t human. My senses just told me to run! If I didn’t, I wouldn’t be here now. What the hell, why would a life sword be like 10 meters long? You’d be marked as a high class knight if your Life Sword just encases your actual weapon.

“...It isn’t free, is it?”

“Of course it isn’t! This is illegal, you know? You’d be in trouble if you were caught~”

The girl’s smiling face is scary, but... I, I want it!

“Hohoho, I’ll be expecting some things from you later~”

“Right.”

An explosion sounded nearby when Cia smiled. I sighed inside at

that moment as well.

Should I... just retire...?

## Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (2)

---

...Maybe I should actually retire.

I was currently staring at a single piece of paper in a pile of documents.

The paper told me to go take care of someone in a few days.

Hoho, it's rare to give missions to instructors... No, before that, I just don't want to do this... and I'd have to find a substitute as well...

I wanted to test Cia's Life Sword Restricting Device, but now I gotta go on a trip?! Well, I am considered a pretty powerful force within the organization.

I knew a lot of different skills other than ones related to swords, and I also possess much information on all kinds of things.

It's just... that I can't use magic, nor can I use the life sword.

...The problem is, those two things are the most important in life. You can't even become a knight without the life sword, and as for magic, even the peasants use it.

At first, I thought I had some problem with imagination, because I lived in a world without magic. But once I saw that I were unable

to use artifacts, which were supposed to be usable by anyone with mana, I gave up.

In any case! I'm old now! I'm on the verge of retiring! So why are you guys giving me jobs?! Oh, and by the way, I have to find the substitute instructor as well.

If they were normal kids, I could just send in anyone... but there's not many who can take on these children... Mm... I'll have to combat poison with poison.

Poison for poison! Disciple for disciples! My former disciples should be able to handle this.

The damned first generation, who decided to become heroes instead of villains, are out. The second generation I created to combat the first generation is out, as they became too evil and greedy and made their own evil organization. The third generation is too weird, so they're out. Therefor.

“...Instructor, I'm busy nowadays...”

The kindest of the fourth generation, and the one who got brainwashed the most!

His golden hair that reaches his shoulders shines in the sunlight, and serves to accentuate his face. He, whose annoyed face even manages to look like a tsundere, is one of my greatest life insurances in my old age, one of my 3 disciples in the fourth

generation!

He is Hawel Ril Rein! He is a villain! In the Organization!

“...Busy playing with women.”

“This is still a job in the organization, you know?!”

He is the person who earns information and money from the Organization... he's a host. In other words, an errand boy?

“Take care of my disciples for a while.”

“...Right, right. Are they my disciples?”

“Yes.”

He asks this with shining eyes. What, you want to look good as a senior or something? You might get beat up by them, you know?

Hoho, come to think of it, I used to call him a monster, too. Sorry about that. You're just a civilian. Or the kids I'm training now are the descendants of Super Saiyans or something.

I guess it's like how Piccxlo was supposed to be the demon king, and then a planet full of Piccxlos appear, and a guy who destroys that planet, Frexza, appears.



I lowered my voice towards the excited man in front of me.

“Take care of my disciples for 3 weeks.”

“Ah... Aah...”

The man looked at the symbol of the head instructor in my hands, and fell on his knees with deeply moved eyes.

“Can you do it?”

“I’ll do it!”

The man politely brought his two hands towards me. And to him, I said,

“Then... I shall leave this bat to you.”

The moment the bat touched his hands, the man began to cry out of joy.

“...I’ll teach them with my life on the line!”

...you don’t have to go that far.

# Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (3)

---

## 3.5 Their Story

[1]Hawel Ril Rein: Eh, what's this... I'm screwed...

A blonde hair that flows down to the shoulders.

A face that might be mistaken as a woman's.

Lastly, a voice that is able to enchant countless women of the empire. That is me, Hawel Ril Rein.

And... Today, today is the day I get to teach my juniors as a substitute for the great teacher! And in my right hand, there is... the nightmare from the time when I was a child, the weapon that I had wanted to hold all my life. I have the ultimate weapon that the instructor calls the bat in my hand!

Ahh... the feeling of the bat in my hand is simply indescribable. It's even better than the time when I first touched the hand of a noble maiden.

And a little later... I forgot that feeling completely, and closed my mouth.

If I were to summarize what I was looking at with one word... Scary?

What the hell? I remember doing the running exercise as a kid... It was a training in which I learned to not trust anyone. It only continued for a month though... And from what I heard, these kids were under the instructor for 3 years... No, before that.

“Huaaa!”

“Chains!”

“...Waves!”

What, is this the apocalypse? The famous Ragnarok? The earth is turning to chains, life swords are flying everywhere, and those energies turn into waves.

If I remember correctly, two of them’s 17, and one’s 16? Wait, isn’t that around the time when I came in? Why do they look like top-class members of the Organization already?

“Surprised?”

“S, senior?!”

When I turn around in surprise, I can see Cia, my senior. She was one of the generation that the instructor dubbed “the most dangerous generation of them all”, who all became very high ranked in the Organization.

She was also someone who came to the instructor's training occasionally when I was there. When I began to work in a host club, I met her several times to exchange info. What should I say... she's quite scary.

"Mm... The ones this time's quite special."

She says that with a smile... hey, senior, your gaze towards the girls over there's quite scary? Makes me want to erase you?

No, I get what you feel about the instructor, but the instructor isn't a lolicon? No, before that, I don't see him loving anyone any time soon?

"Ah, yeah."

"...Right? They seem special? They must be special to the instructor as well..."

Beep~ beep~ beep~

Danger! Danger! The senior's getting dangerous! A student might die at this raatttteeeeeee!

"I, I'm the substitute instructor!"

I tried to be brave. Dear bat, give me strength! Let me become a

proper instructor at this moment!

“Yeah?”

The senior’s eyes curved upwards. I’ve met many women as a host, but... I rarely get to see anyone with a smile this charming.

...But I only get to see that smile from her when the instructor is involved?

Gulp.

I swallowed out of nervousness. S, should I ask for forgiveness? I should, right? The thing is, I’m in the General Affairs Department right now, but I’m also in the Information Department in terms of gathering info.

But since I often get to talk with high class nobles secretly as well, I live in the Spying Department... In any case, I have a lot of bosses. And one of them just happens to be my senior... She’s also the person who covered up a lot of my mistakes, which means she could also be the person to drag me away into oblivion in an instant...

When I swallowed once more, senior pat my shoulders and smiled.

“Yeah... I can see why teacher made you into a substitute instructor. Well, I don’t really want to do anything to my juniors,

anyway.”

Mm... Is it just me, or did I just hear her say “for now.” at the end? I just misheard, right? Right?

I felt a little scared even after the senior left. I thought things were going to end with just that, but.

“...Where’s the instructor?”

The black haired girl asked me this with an extremely cold face. I was surprised for a moment, but I smiled in the end.

“He went on a business trip.”

“Then you are?”

Mm... How shall I respond to this arrogant child’s question?

“I... What should I say... I’m your substitute instructor, as well as your senior.”

The three kids exchanged glances, nodded, and asked me this all at once.

“””What about breakfast, then?”””

“Eh? W, well... We all eat?”

Once I said that, I felt an intense murderous intent, which I had not felt in a long time.

“...Why did we suffer so much in the morning, then?”

“...Why didn't you say anything?”

“Just die.”

W, wait! It's just breakfast! is what I'd like to say, but I was like that too! I forgot about it because I haven't starved in a long time?! No, before that, that girl! She just told me to die?!

Surprise Q&A Session.

Q1 I just lifted my hands to defend myself. Mm... What do I have in my right hand?

A1 A bat.

Q2 What is the typical response to seeing a bat?

A2 The survival instinct inside you awakens.

## Q3 How are the kids responding?

“””Haaaaaa!”””

## A3 Counterattack!

I cast a defensive magic, and swung the bat out of instinct.

“K, kuaaa!”

The single male of the group tumbled backwards with a scream. The true value of the bat is the fact that it is impossible to block! Either you block with a weapon, or you scream with pain.

“Spear of the earth!”

“Power of the Sea.”

At the same time when the boy fell away, the girls summoned a spear from the earth, and threw a ball of water at me from the sky.

“Guard.”

Like the instructor said, I cast a shield across all sides of my body. it's more effective to stop attacks like these with smaller shields, but according to the instructor, it's better to layer weaker shields



everywhere.

Why? Because.

Crack!

About 3 shields broke apart with an attack from my back. Only novices cast spells verbally. And although things look like this, this is an Evil Organization.

Backstabbing is the one of the basic of the basics!

“Tch.”

“Tch.”

Both of them click their tongue and moved back. With this, I understood. These kids never fought the instructor as a group before. Because of that, they were weak at group battles.

“Whoa?!”

The girl with the staff fell backwards from the hole I dug earlier. It's important to look back at all times!

But the short haired girl jumped back, and avoided the hole at once. It's going to be troublesome to face her...

I didn't want to be like this from the start, but... This club... no, this bat... once I began to swing it, I felt my body begin to get more and more excited. Ah... it felt much, much greater than I had initially thought!

My grip was strengthened without me realizing, and I felt something awakening inside me.

What is it? It's my instinct for destruction?!

It feels like the time when I was a active-duty soldier. Well, I am one now as well... but it's awkward to call a host that!

For now, I smiled towards the children to confuse them with a huge secret.

“Do you know? There is an object more dangerous than this club, no, bat.”

“What?”

Everyone widened their eyes in surprise. This was expected. After all, I was unable to even sleep the first time I heard about it.

“It's a weapon made of metal, instead of wood. According to my senior, a hell unfolds when the silver light flashes? It is the demonic weapon that only appeared in the generation before mine,

the weapon that even the instructor becomes reluctant to use, the ultimate weapon that is normally sealed.”

“N, no way!”

“T, that kind of thing shouldn’t exist in the mortal world?!”

“Y, yea... Kyaha!”

The cold girl and the boy both widened their eyes with a face full of shock and fear.

Even the girl who began to float out of the hole she fell in with flying magic fell down, as if she lost her concentration.

“...It exists. I’ve never seen it personally, but... I’ve heard things about it. The weapon that makes this thing in my hand feel like a mere toy. The... metal bat.”

The children in front of me made a dazed face in that instant. They seem to be unable to accept the horrible truth.

But I’ve already accepted it! After all, even Cia and the other seniors made that kind of a face! There’s no way this would be a lie! That kind of a face doesn’t appear when lying!

I understand they weren’t unable to take it all in, and this was exactly what I had been looking more. I swung the bat

immediately. Their reaction to this was quite good, but it was too late!

“Hup?!”

Eh, what the! He endured it! He endured that pain! A, amazing!

I was surprised at the boy's endurance, but I immediately shortened the distance between them. Come to think of it, they all make magic! What the hell are these cheat characters?!

I know that even peasants are able to use magic, but the magic these kids were using were out of the norm. A, as expected of the instructor?

“Burn, Sutr?”

“Eh?”

At that moment, I heard this from a certain hole nearby. Eh? Sutr? Is it really the Sutr I know of? The Sutr that destroyed the world and killed gods?

-Kuoooooooo!

Ah... it wasn't supposed to be like this.

Why is such a demon in front of me. Mm, what is it. Do kids make contracts with demons nowadays? Wait, before that, is breakfast really that important to youuuuuuuu?!

Crack!

-Kueeeeeee!

“What the hell...”

I swung the bat out of surprise at Sutr, and... he's in a lot of pain. He really is in a lot of pain. That demon? He's in pain? From a single swing of a bat?

“...This might actually be the weapon of the devil itself.”

I regained my confidence. Right, I have the legendary bat in my hands! I have the weapon that can even defeat demons like Sutr!

“Come at me, you midgets!”

Mm... what was my original goal again?

## Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (4)

---

How many weeks had passed since I got the mission?

Dang it... D, did I do something wrong?!

Groups of black-clothed men whose appearances screams “I’m suspicious!” “I’m a murderer!” at me tries to kill me. W, what the hell?!

The only thing I did was to smuggle away a certain object the Organization had wanted for myself, and smuggle away a tinnnyyyy bit of money for my future. But when I came back to the rendezvous point, I found that all my comrades had been killed.

It was good that I had prepared for an attack thanks to smelling blood with this keen nose of mine. If I wasn’t prepared, I’d be dead.

I’ve been running around setting traps everywhere, but they keep catching up, which tires me out.

Shuu!

Baang!

E, especially those wizards! Damn cheaters, I can’t use magic, damn it!

These invisible arrows and explosive magics are driving me crazy.

I'm evading them somehow, but they'd eventually surround me completely...

Who the hell is attacking me, though? I can't really tell who they are, since I have so many enemies. If I just count the ones in the empire... The royal family, Raina family, Astraa family, Narhar family, Andrio family, Hers family, Nermia family, Harsen family, Macendria family... Mm, feels like I'm still missing a few.

If I sort them out according to recent events, the ones who would have a real grudge with me about now would be the royal family, the Raina family, the Narhar Family, and the Nermia family... The royal family has someone who'd sort things out for me, the Narhar family's probably still confused about what's going on... Mm, it has to be either the Raina family or the Nermia family. But... my villainous instinct tells me that might not be the case...

Ah, this is the problem with being a successful villain. Your wages go up, but hate against you goes up as well...

“Die!”

I killed one of the dudes running at me. I'm actually pretty strong. I can even win against a pretty strong swordsman!

Hmph! I'm still at my prime! My body is not at its twenties, but I have more experience, as well as tools.

First, I landed a counter to the idiot that just ran at me, sliced up the one who tried to come at me from behind then retreat, then dodged another invisible arrow.

“Annoying.”

I dislike magic. I don't like it because I can't block it. Life swords have a low range, but magic has a supremely long range, so it gets super annoying.

Swoosh!

“K, keh!”

Well, it's like I can't take them out, though.

I threw some knives at where I thought the magician might be, and it's an out! The people from this world seem to do things from the textbook or something. They just all decide to hide at the same locations.

They hide at a certain spot, they snipe from a certain spot, and they lay traps at a certain spot.

As long as you know where they might be, things get easy.



Like this, I run, and I run some more!

And around the time when I felt that I had escaped completely,

Clang!

...Aah, that bitch! My sword! This stuff's expensive!

I screamed that in my head, but my sword was already gone for good. It would be impossible to block a life sword unless I used a legendary sword or a sword made by a dwarf.

This means that a guy who uses a life sword has appeared! Of course, a few appeared already, but I got them before they could even use it. But this one was different. He was able to use it in an instant.

In other words, he was like a high class knight. Mm, I pretended to be strong earlier, but I can only fight with a high class knight who can't use the life sword. I'd actually be screwed over if a middle class knight who uses the life sword appeared.

Why? That thing's like a cheat code. Damage increase, range increase, weapon destruction capabilities, and physical buffs, even.

No matter how much I work, if a life sword appeared? Oh,

dearest! Fudge. I'd even get screwed by teens! Well, teenagers who can get me would be real cheat characters, but since all my disciples can use the life sword nowadays, I'm pretty afraid of teenage life sword users becoming the norm nowadays.

Well, that's that... Mm...

"Do I know you?"

The black-clothed man in front of me seems familiar. Mm... where did I see him? When I tried to run away with my half sword,

"Haah... I told you to restrain yourself a bit."

"...You are?"

I remember this voice. That's because...

"It's been awhile, instructor."

This guy's my disciple.

# Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (5)

---

## 3.5 Their Story

### [1.5] A Certain Organization's Story

“Groups 1 and 9 made their move.”

With these words, the surrounding area stirred greatly.

“Would they be enough?”

“The man cannot use the Life Sword. His abilities are great, but the gods have forsaken him.”

“If he could use the Life Sword, the greatest swordsman today would not be the one we have right now.”

The greatest empire in the continent, the Karuan Empire. Somewhere in the empire, every one of the leaders of the largest evil organization of the continent, Howling, had been gathered.

Just for a single instructor!

“...That man is too dangerous.”

Everyone nodded in dissent. The man's battle experience was

much lower than others, but his abilities by themselves were amazing.

His understanding of swords was high.

Although he couldn't use the Life Sword, the basic sword moves he had come up with was something that everyone in the Howling Organization learn as soon as they came in.

His understanding of magic was also extremely high.

He just couldn't use it. His knowledge of it, however, was said to rival the top scholars of the tower of magic.

His office work was unrivalled.

After he came, Howling's structure began to become more and more like the one he had suggested in the past. That structure was more efficient, and easier to manage.

Lastly, he had a good eye.

Everyone laughed when he just picked two disciples in the beginning.

2 out of 40? An instructor's rank was chosen based on the abilities of his students. But the man had only taken in two people.

Because of that, everyone laughed at him and his disciples. As a result, the two disciples ran away from the organization, and went onto become heroes. Only then did the organization realize how much of a monster the two disciples were.

But everyone thought that was just a fluke. But when he took on the second generation of his disciples, 4 out of 6 of them went onto create an evil organization that could rival Howling. Only then did the Organization realize. This man was the real deal.

The third generation seemed to strengthen that point.

There were only three disciples in this generation.

One of them had become the leader of the information department, one had become the leader of the financial department, and the other had become the leader of the strongest assassination department of the organization, the Darksword.

The fourth generation was a little weaker than the third generation, but they were still all extremely powerful.

The problem was, the man was treating the new generation as he did with all the other generations.

“Hmm... Teacher just doesn’t discriminate, I guess.”

All eyes went to the woman who said this. One of the men opened his mouth.

“You didn’t help him out of affection or anything, did you?”

“Hmm~ I may respect him, but I know where to draw the line.”

“...Well, there’s no one who doesn’t respect him, but there are also many who hates him.”

“...I suppose so. He’s strict, and...”

Did she remember something? Her smiling face instantly paled, and she began to tremble violently.

‘...Just what the hell happened to her?’

‘She seems to fear him a lot, despite being a disciple...’

‘To think even she could be afraid...’

“Hum, hum... Anyway! Not even teacher would be get out of this one alive.”

Cia recovered from her fear, and began to talk once more.

“Group 1 is skilled in killing, and Group 9 is skilled in surrounding. We also put the leader, the co leader, and the 6 group leaders in as well. It’s enough to destroy a small noble family

overnight.”

“Even so...”

“Isn’t Rudh, the leader, a disciple of that man as well?”

“Right. There is a chance that Rudh might not kill him. But then again, there is no way that he wouldn’t fight. His goal is to be stronger than the teacher, after all.”

“Mm... Right.”

“Besides that, there is still one thing that we must talk about. The empire is trying to destroy us.”

“There’s quite a lot of nobles who have ties with us... The emperor must be going senile.”

“Well, it would be good to use this chance to put the fourth prince as the new emperor.”

“Hm... I personally like the eighth prince more.”

“The second prince is pretty good as well.”

Like this, everyone began to discuss the princes they were supporting. In the end, the creator of the Organization, the man

who ruled the night, opened his mouth.

“In any case.”

His quiet voice that seemed to be filled with power silenced everyone.

Then, he spoke.

“Let us take care of the rats in our midst.”

‘Teacher, this might actually be dangerous?’



## Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (6)

---

Gulp.

I gulped out of nervousness. Shit...

To think that that idiot would appear! Wait, that means...

“The Organization, is it?”

“Well... Yes.”

The guy shrugs nonchalantly, but... What the hell did I do?!

Mm, did someone find out that I made a secret bank account for myself? Or did they find out that I stole precious metals from them?

Mm... D, did that find out that I went to the secret library? I, if it isn't that, did they...

I keep thinking about what I might've done. While I did so, my former disciple sighed, and took up his sword.

“Why'd you have to take those kids as disciples! Things became just too dangerous!”

What? The hell you talking about? They became like that on their own! Wait, in the first place, what the hell did the kids even do?!

I keep thinking about why I have to get beat up by my former disciple as I dodge his attacks. I couldn't come up with a proper reason. It's good if the Organization gets stronger, right? So why are you attacking me for that?!

Clang!

Damn it! My half-sword just became a no-sword. I tried throwing the handle, but the guy just went chop chop and it was gone. And!

"I've been surrounded?"

"Well, Group 9 had been dispatched, after all. You know about them as well, right?"

D, damn it! Why did they have to send in the best group in the Darksword! Why are there people who can use the Life Sword as well?!

"Don't worry about them. They won't move while we fight."

"You're saying that when you already have me surrounded? I can't believe it."

“You were the one who taught me to run when you have the chance, though? I wouldn’t be able to catch you ever again if you run here.”

The guy’s eyes were turning red. He seemed to be using the Madness skill.

It was something a little different from the Berserker magic, something that was unique to him, who was a part-beastman. This bastard is actually trying to stab his teacher with all his power?

Even while knowing that... My humanity still tells me to not use that.

“K... Kuaa!”

The fighting aura soon turns into a murderous one. It was strong enough to make even my body tremble.

At that point, my rationality told me this.

[Screw your humanity! Just use it!]

Ok! Although this is just my rationality telling me this, it’s still a part of me! I come first over anything else!

My right hand began to heat up. At the same time, an annoyed voice entered my head.

-You bastard, you keep me imprisoned all this while, and you just call me out now that you're in danger?

[Help me out here, damn it.]

-Hmph! As someone who got imprisoned in a dusty place like that, I have a lot of complaints?

[If I die, my disciples will melt you, you know?]

-...How persuasive.

[Have some fresh air, why don't you.]

-...Tch.

It seemed to be filled with complaints, but I still got permission. At this moment, my former disciple who was half-mad right now charged at me. That idiot. He's using the same pattern to attack me over and over again.

But then again, the last time he attacked me like this, I held it in my hands, and right now, I'm just summoning it.

I suppose the guy doesn't realize that I can use something akin to a high class summoning magic, as I'm the person who is often seen as "the man cursed by the gods."

“...Come,”

I stretched out my right hand towards my disciple’s attack.

At the same time.

“Arcadia.”

A silver light brightened the night spectacularly.

# Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (7)

---

## 3.5 Their Story

[2] Aruen Rudh's Story: Oh fuck wait!

“Our target today is Instructor Naruan.”

I heard a name that I hadn't heard in a while.

My only source of fear as well as my respect. The one that I want to beat the most, as well as my greatest teacher. But why him?

“Why?”

I spoke shortly, but that's ok since I have a higher rank than him. According to my instructor, it's fine to speak rudely to anyone as long as you have a higher rank.

“He's training his disciples too well.”

“Nn? The hell does that mean.”

Isn't it good if they get trained well? I have to kill him for doing his job? Did the Organization finally go crazy? I thought these thoughts, but then I ended up sighing when I heard the next words.

“He trained the descendants of the Raina family and the Nermia family to become extremely powerful.”

“Hah...”

God damn it, this instructor... I know that he doesn't discriminate between anyone, but isn't this too much? Why the hell is he training spies like that?

Could it be that he doesn't know that they're spies? No, everyone should've been alerted about the spies. The information department should've sent info about their name, age, and everything else...

Nn?

...The information department? The leader of that thing was Cia, right?

If what I'm thinking is right... Instructor, apologies for being unable to defend you.

“Understood.”

But what am I supposed to do here? I'm supposed to obey the Organization no matter what. That's the only way I can advance quickly. Well, that's not what he actually said, but that's the point

of it.

There were several group leaders as well as the infamous Group 1 and 9.

“Phew~ There’s quite a lot.”

“Well, he is your instructor after all... We need to be prepared.”

“Yeah, he beat you mercilessly, didn’t he?”

“T, that was a long time ago!”

Puhahaha!

I shouted this with a flushed face, but everyone just laughed. Damn it! That damned co leader... I’ll definitely punish him when we get back.

After thinking that, I sighed, and lowered my voice a little.

“But that instructor... He’s the real deal. About half of us are expected to die.”

The laughter immediately stopped. Although they speak immaturely, they were a part of the greatest fighting force in the Organization.



They were mostly extremely good assassins as well.

“I feel sorry for the instructor, but be prepared to go all out. No, that wouldn’t be enough. Just be prepared to die.”

And that night, I had waited for the instructor at the place where he was suppose to meet up with his comrades, but he had managed to escape.

A normal swordsman of his calibre would not run because of pride, but the instructor was different. There were only two things that he would stress the most to everyone around him.

First, if you die, it’s all over. You can always build up your reputation.

Second, do not try to view the world in black and white. There is always a light dirtier than darkness, and there is darkness that shines brighter than light itself. Do not judge the world based on how it judges you, judge it based on your morals.

And the instructor always was the perfect example of his ideas.

“17 is dead!”

“Leader of Group 11 is dead! 23 and 8 died as well.”

“3 members of Group 9 died trying to surround him!”

“Leaders of Group 8 and 18 are down!”

Soon enough, I began to get reports of death. Group leaders were strong enough to use the Life Sword. A swordsman who was unable to use the Life Sword, however, were easily neutralizing them.

“...They’re getting taken down in one hit?”

I was able to see just how strong the instructor was now. Everyone was downed in one hit. He kills assassins faster than an assassin. How did this even make sense?

“Leader, he’s going to location 7.”

“Create a large net around him, and slowly choke him. Don’t risk anything, and put all the leaders at the front. Use 3 leaders and 7 subordinates.”

How much time passed since I last saw the instructor? I remember him telling me this the last time I had seen him.

[The most important thing is... the sucker punch.]

Kill your presence. Kill your breathing. Kill your mind.

The Life Sword is too much for an assassin. Bright lights and great powers are not associated with assassinations.

Because of that, I condensed my power and attacked at a crucial moment.

Clang! I aimed at the heart, but he blocked with his sword. The sword that got hit by the Life Sword was chopped in half.

To him, who could not use the Life Sword, this was critical.

I can win. I can actually win!

When I was overcome with happiness, the instructor spoke with his usual cold tone.

“Do I know you?”

I became sad when I heard that, but well, it's all my uniform's fault, I guess. What should I say, though... Mm... Should I tell him why I'm here, or should I tell him my last words as a disciple?

After thinking a bit, I just sighed.

“Haah... I told you to restrain yourself a bit.”

“...You are?”

Thankfully, he seemed to remember my voice.

“It’s been awhile, instructor.”

I bowed a little and sent him my greetings. The instructor maintained his cold face, and spoke as if he knew everything.

“The Organization, is it?”

“Well... Yes.”

I shrugged, but in my head, I was thinking something different. So he knew everything... I suppose not even Cia would do something that dangerous. No matter what his worldview is, why would he train the kids of our enemies...

“Why’d you have to take those kids as disciples! Things became just too dangerous!”

Mm, I raised my voice in accident. Honestly, I don’t want to cut down my teacher. I may be famous for not being discriminatory, but I still have to draw the line somewhere, right?

Well, it’s not like I’m hesitant or anything. The instructor isn’t someone I’d be merciful to, honestly.

I attack, and attack, and attack.

I slash quickly, but the instructor dodges by a hair's breadth every time.

He's using just his body's strength to dodge everything.

‘Amazing, but!’

I gathered my strength into my toes. It stresses my body, but this should end it all. One hit kill. The strongest assassin is not the one who is skilled with swords, he is not one who kills many at once, nor is he a person who can control energy efficiently.

One hit, one kill. It is enough if he can kill the target in one hit.

I gather strength into my toes, then I charged with my blade.

Clang!

‘!!!’

I didn't expect this attack to be blocked. But the instructor can't use his sword anymore? The instructor threw the handle at me, but I sliced it apart.

I don't know about others, but if it's that instructor, he could've turned that handle into a dangerous weapon.

“I’ve been surrounded?”

Once I heard that, I began to notice the presences around me. Was I too focused or something?

“Well, Group 9 had been dispatched, after all. You know about them as well, right?”

I responded casually. I’m no kid now. I’m the leader of the Darksword.

But. No, because of that, this will be a one on one!

“Don’t worry about them. They won’t move while we fight.”

They won’t attack, so please focus.

“You’re saying that when you already have me surrounded? I can’t believe it.”

“You were the one who taught me to run when you have the chance, though? I wouldn’t be able to catch you ever again if you run here.”

Again, please focus. Please go all out. Please... allow me to surpass you!

“K... Kuaa!”

I run forward once my instincts awoke. This is a one on one! I shall beat you with pure skill!

But the instructor's reaction towards my move was a bit strange. He just swung his arms in midair...

“...Come,”

I felt a chill run across my back, but I ignored it. That was my fatal mistake.

“Arcadia.”

A silver light. Then...

“Me... metal...”

This is a dream. This is all false. Something like that shouldn't be here.

“Y, y, y, you... S, s, shouldn't be... magic...”

My head stopped functioning. My body became paralyzed. Something like this cannot be here!

“It’s a form of black magic.”

“L, l, liar! E, e, even if it’s black magic.”

“Right. Because it’s black magic, the cost for doing this is very high. Black magic is a form of magic that is very reliant on contracts. But... what if this weapon had an ego?”

“.....”

The shock rendered me speechless. Ego? Egoooo?!

Ego.

A weapon with intelligence. It was powerful by itself, but its ego was what made it truly priceless.

Many warriors use it, and the sword remembers every battle.

An old ego weapon is smarter than any strategist, and stronger than any swordsman.

No, before that! Why the hell is that thing an ego weapon!

“Then, for now...”



“N, no!”

I tried to run, but.

“Punishment time.”

I could not dodge that.

## Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (8)

---

“K, kuaaa! P, please! Stop!”

I stared apologetically at my disciple screaming in pain, and...

“No.”

Started to beat the bastard who tried to stab me some more.

“K, kuaaa! U.. U, uaaah!”

-Huhehe, that's the stuff! Left, right, one, two!

The wooden bat and the metal bat doesn't just look different.

Their actual difference lies in the amount of enchantments and curses on it? Also, the materials that were used as well?

The wooden bat was created using the wood from the legendary tree of Yggdrasil. Mm... that's what the dwarves told me, so I guess I can just believe that.

It's a material used in the staves of archmages, and in the warships of the imperial navy as well. As long as it's processed well, it is said to be able to block even the Life Sword.

Well, that all depends on just who's using the Life Sword, though.

But the metal bat is different. It's like a brand-name product that has a ton of legendary metals in it. Where did I get those legendary metals? I smuggled it away from the Organization's safe little by little. Well, I took it away very little at a time. If I didn't do it like that, I'd be dead right now. Where'd I get the rest of the metal? I stole it from the Noble families.

Mm, that's actually why the Organization's so infamous in the empire. I stole from the Organization's safe, I stole some family heirlooms from various Noble families, etc etc... Well, they all got melted down at this point.

And the strangest thing of it all is, the metal bat doesn't actually look like a bat. There's a limit to how many enchantments you can cast on something that looks like a club.

Because of that, I made a bunch of metal rings, cast enchantments on each and every one of them, and connected each one of those into a chain. then, I wrapped those chains around to create something that resembled a bat.

But, since it still didn't give me that satisfactory whack that came from the conventional bats, I tried something new. That was a homunculus.

I thought about making a metal homunculus, and tried to use that to create something that would deliver me the ideal whack.

Out of luck, I was able to create something that had 99 curses, 108 enchantments, 30 magic spells and 27 dark magic spells imbued in it. The ego bat had been born.

Thanks to that, even the dwarves became extremely surprised! But there was only one homunculi weapon that had ever been created, and the dwarves are now frantically researching this strange phenomenon. I'm helping them out occasionally as well.

Ah, back to the original topic, the difference in the wooden bat and the metal bat lies in the amount of enchantments and curses.

The wooden bat has more curses compared to enchantments. There are 8 magic spells, 20 curses, 17 enchantments, and 3 dark magic spells.

What does that matter? The enchantments mostly serve to disable any negative effects except pain from curses. That's how the wooden bat doesn't hurt you, but actually massages you in reality.

But the metal bat has a lot of enchantments. What does that do?

The body gets better. You regain your strength. Your body becomes healthy. You become energetic. You become sensitive, and your body starts moving closer to perfection.

In other words, you can't faint.

When you get hit with the wooden bat, you can actually faint. You do wake after being beat up in that state more, but once you get beat to a certain point, your body tries to defend itself and faint.

But! Although the metal bat hurts more than its wooden counterpart, it does not allow you to faint. Why? That's because you get healthier the more you get hit by it. Because of that, you just feel a shitload of pain while becoming a healthy sonuvabitch. Theoretically, your power and skills would get stronger by 1.4 times when getting hit by the metal bat. If you can actually fight, that is.

-Heeheeheehee! T, this is it!

Ah, this thing's going over to the other side again. Everything's perfect about Arcadia except one thing. This thing's a little crazy. What should I say... the ultimate sadist? This thing starts breathing heavily when it looks at people that it hit before.

Mm... That's one of the reasons why I tend not to use it.

“Uahhh...”

I can only sigh when I look at the former disciple try to crawl away with his tongue hanging out.

“You still need to be beat more.”

“N... Nhooo...”

You can't run, you know. I try to continue my drum solo after saying that, but.

“A, attack!”

Tch, I haven't even finished, and you attack? Don't you remember what your leader told you?

I'll teach you to be obedient to your leaders.

Crack.

“Hurk!”

Crack.

“Puha?!”

Crack.

“Kuaaaaaa!”

One falls with each and every blow. Hm, they're all actually

pretty good. Usually people run when they see stuff like this, but these guys aren't...

Crack.

“Hauuu!”

“Leaders aren't supposed to run.”

Well, it's not like I don't understand his actions. Actually, I should applaud him for being able to even stand up.

But.

“You need to see this through to the end.”

I'd try to just run at this point, but.

“There's a need to kill them all.”

I had to actually think about this a bit. If I let them live, they'd come chasing me. But it feels wrong to kill off my former disciple. If I kill off everyone here, the entire Darksword would get super mad at me... And there's a lot of people following this kid, too...

But if I just kill the subordinates, this former disciple would mine would get pissed...

There's only one choice, then. I'll have to put them into a situation where they can't even chase me, and I'll plant fear into their brain.

-Drumstick form.

-Ohh! What's this?

The metal bat turned into two short sticks.

“W, w, what are yo...”

When the former disciple says this with a pale face filled with fear, I told this foolish child what I was about to do like a kind instructor I was.

“I am planning on performing music.”

Mm, let's start with George Winston's “Variations on Canon”.

You are the instrument, and I am the musician! In other words, you guys are drums.

“Gaah!”

“Kuooo!”



“S, stooooop!”

This marked the beginning of my moonlit concert.

# Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (9)

---

## 3.5 Their Story

[2.5] A Certain Empire's Story: Let's begin the clean-up operation.

“Your highness! There is no need for the imperial family to do this!”

“Right! We can take care of those rats ourselves!”

In a place that was louder than the town market, the emperor sighed and spoke lightly to himself.

“Annoying.”

“Your highness, saying that in the midst of the meeting is...”

“It's ok, it's not like they can hear what we're talking about or anything.”

“...Bitch.”

“Oi, I'm an emperor, you know?”

“Be more like an emperor, then. Do it before I start a rebellion.”

“Those guys are being annoying though.”

After hearing this, Aruten, the man who was the Imperial Magician as well as the emperor’s close friend, scanned the people in the meeting and sighed.

“Just how much did they get bribed just to support Howling that much?”

“Probably more than half of the people here got briberies.”

“Mm... Getting rid of Howling would be hard.”

The emperor reassured the magician that the man was wrong as soon as the words escaped the magician’s lips.

“I already sent out the army, though?”

“What the fuck did you say?”

Aruten’s veins popped out, and he immediately struggled to keep the magic intact. As soon as he prevented his spell from breaking, he glared at the emperor.

“Mm... Well, the guys over there would probably bitch around for a while if I didn’t do something.”

Perhaps it was because of the wizard's glare, but the emperor seemed to be quite nervous as he spoke.

"W, well, I sent my bodyguards along, so it should be fine...."

"Are you crazy? Who'd guard you if you sent away your bodyguards?"

"Mm... I don't need anyone to guard me?"

"..."

Aruten was struck speechless. The emperor in front of him was the greatest idiot in the history of the empire, but was also a genius. If he wasn't, the imperial palace would've nearly collapsed by now. In truth, this emperor was someone who was once hailed as the sword emperor in the past.

"...And there's you, too."

"...Don't say something that disgusting. Say that to a girl instead, damn it."

Aruten sighed as he stroked his white beard.

"Hah... You already started doing it, so you might as well deal the final blow as well."

“Mn? How?”

“Just say it’s the imperial decree, and that you’d just kill them if they disobeyed.”

“...You’re even more daring than me?”

“I’m your friend, after all.”

The emperor looked at Aruten with a dissatisfied face, but the wizard seemed ready to ignore the emperor completely when faced with complaints.

“...Well, in any case, this should probably work out one way or the other.”

“Hmm, what about the children who are captured there, though?”

“They will have to be sacrificed for this, most likely.”

“There are a lot of children from noble families who joined to spy as well. One of them even has the right to the throne.”

“You don’t have to worry about that one. The old man from Nermia sent in the Sword Saint. Well, he sent her in to save the kid from his family, but Swin’s at the place where the heir of Nermia

is, so it's all good."

"You remembered the boy's name? You must've liked him."

The emperor made a happy smile after hearing this.

"Yeah. He... he resembles me from a long time ago."

"...Didn't you say that about the crown prince as well?"

"Yeah."

"And you know that the crown prince goes out playing with women every day, right?"

"Of course I do. He already knows how to enjoy the world at such a young age... he was born to be an emperor."

"...Oi, are you telling me playing around is a good thing?"

"If he has the talent to become the emperor even while playing around, he is fit to be the emperor. I'm a genius too, remember?"

Aruten closed his eyes, and reminisced the past he had shared with the emperor.

He could remember the emperor playing outside while he studied

magic.

He could remember the emperor seducing women while he frantically researched magic.

He could remember the emperor being recognized as a high-class knight, when he barely managed to become a full-fledged wizard.

He could remember the emperor seducing away his first love around the time he got recognized by the tower.

He could remember the emperor becoming the sword emperor around the time he became an archmage.

He could remember the emperor being crowned when he became the imperial wizard after much effort.

“Maybe I really should start a rebellion...”

When Aruten glared at the emperor, the emperor purposefully looked away.

“Hum, hum... In any case. We can’t leave Howling be.”

“...Evil always rises from time and again.”

“We still can’t leave them be.”

Aruten sighed after looking into the emperor's eyes, and dispelled the barrier.

“...that, your highness!”

“No, before that, think of the peasants, your highness!”

“No, before that!”

“From this moment forth, I shall issue out an Imperial decree.”

Everyone turned silent from the emperor's voice that was filled with power and authority.



And

“Let us begin the cleaning operation.”

No one was able to go against that order.

## Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (10)

---

Mm, thankfully, everything ended with the “Variations on Canon.”

Damn, this brings up memories of those rhythm games I used to play on my phone... Rhythm Star, was it?

In any case, I stashed away the drooling boys who seemed to have awoken to a dangerous new world into a secluded spot and made my way over to a village with my disguises on.

Hm, what would this village be, you ask? It's a “normal” village that has quite a bit of my influence in it.

What would that be? Think of it as a branch of the Organization. Something that was created by the Organization through the use of slaves.

Why would the Organization do that? For safety, of course!

When you look at how heroes work, they level up after losing someone precious to them, and do whatever they can to destroy the organization that killed their family/friends.

If I were to put this in a different way, the heroes wouldn't level up as long as their family and friends were untouched. Heroes are busy. They destroy everything they deem evil around them, but they don't touch those who don't touch them. We just need to stay

out of their way.

This village also allowed us to have a hiding spot.

This is our village. We rule it. To the citizens here, we are like nobles, beings that rule them without having them know who we are. The one thing that separates us from nobles is the fact that we treat them better.

Those who heard of Utopias from a long time ago should know.

It is a fictional place, something that is completely imaginary.

There is no hunger. There is no violence. There is no need to think.

The Utopia that I created was no different. As long as you complete menial tasks, you get rewarded. You can live happily without working hard or thinking.

You might think that is a Utopia, but if there is someone above you doing all this, it's no different from slavery.

We are the gods who give them happiness and erase violence.

There are no fools that would dare attack anything that belongs to the empire's greatest evil organization, and it doesn't even take much to maintain a village.

The village would then serve to work as human barriers to stop enemies.

The people of the villages are slaves. Victims. The people who have to be rescued.

By putting villages full of these people around the organization, a hero would question whether it's right or wrong to destroy the organization, and it would be hard for the empire to attack.

It was honestly a half-assed idea at first, but it brought such an enormous result that I was assigned to office work as well as teaching. Plus, I already have a fake identity in the village. Since I manage the village myself, there's no chance at all I'd be caught!

Why'd I come here, even when I'm being chased by the Organization? My retirement funds are all there! My precious metals! My gems! They're all there! Also, I have to retrieve the bat. It's too dangerous to have it out in the world.

...I just don't want to lose it!

-Hey, master? Master? We're gonna fight again, right? Hahn... w, who are we going to beat?

“Shut up.”

-Hahn, you're the only one who can hear me right now, though?

"Annoying."

-Hnng... Master changed... you used to... stick me in a dusty place for days... oh wait, you haven't changed much.

"You were quiet before, and now..."

-Well, I was mad because you stuck me in a place like that! B, but, that rhythm from a while back... Ha... the, this is why I like you~  
<3

I feel like I just got marked by a pervert. Also, I'm starting to think if this thing's bipolar. I made this to have a little girl's voice when I made it, but when it's angry... what should I say... more like an old man? It's strange how it changes like that.

Ah, don't misunderstand. I'm no lolicon. What? You think I'm lying? Think, then. What if a voice of a ego weapon was that of an old man? Think about it. When you're fighting or thinking, all of the sudden you hear the voice of an old man in you.

...You get why I made it like this? If I made the voice into a sexy woman... My Excalibur may break out of its seal.

-...I feel like you just thought of something pervy.

“I wasn’t thinking about you. Just be quiet.”

-...Tch, just what about me isn’t attractive?

“Metal club.”

-G, god damn it! I can change into all kinds of weapons, and I can even turn into a human! Just who’s making me look like this here?!

“Hitting people in that form gives me the best hand feel.”

-...You’re a perv too.

I entered my office through one of my 12 secret exits as I chatted with my metal bat. I came out from the back of my closet to the office, and... Eh? Why am I smelling blood?

When I opened the door and peered into the office, I was able to spot a young woman who was sitting on the only chair in the office, with her legs up on the table. Her curves are amaz... No, before that, her smile as she strokes her sword is quite charming... No, before that.

“Did I see you before?”

“Hmm? Well, I am quite famous.”

The moment our eyes met, all my instincts told me to run.

And this feeling I'm getting here is...

Clang!

My hand instinctively blocked the sword stroke. Fuck...

“Sword Saint.”

“Ehe~ so you know?”

The smile immediately turned into a grin. And.

“Well then... Let's fight?”

Ah... I'm screwed.

# Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (11)

---

## 3.5 Their Story

[3]Raina Rel Swin: ...Eh?

The substitute instructor was incredibly strong as well. Apparently, he was supposed to be a host, but he was still unbelievably powerful.

Honestly, he's pretty much as strong as the strongest knights in my family, so why's he even a host...

And he used that thing, that demonic weapon called the bat, with extreme skill. Apparently, he learned all his moves by getting beat by that weapon for a long time, and apparently he's showing off these moves to prepare us when the instructor returns, but... Did anyone say we wanted to see?! No, before that, I don't want to be prepared by being hit by it!

And after a certain duration of time, an unbelievable situation where we all gained a resistance to the bat had appeared.

"Mm... So you have gained resistance to the bat."

"...Unthinkable."

"To think something so impossible would occur..."



“...No.”

The substitute instructor looked at us, who had rotten expressions on our faces, with a serious face.

“Yes, even the bat has a limit. People who have been beaten by it to the limit gain resistance to most pain. But you see... Just because something like this happens doesn't mean that you can start rebelling. Something like that happened to the generation before me. They gained resistance, and... they tried to rebel. And... that... that metal bat came out.”

Gulp.

Everyone became completely quiet. Just because you gained resistance doesn't mean that it doesn't hurt. It still hurts like hell. It's just that you can do things instead of staying immobile.

“One of our seniors began to research the difference between the bat and the metal bat. He soon managed to figure out the difference between the two. That difference is... the enchantments on them. The bat's powers all center around curses. It increases pain and makes it unable to block. But the metal bat... is a blessing. It is possible to resist curses. While strong curses can immediately take your life, weak curses can make you grow resistant. That's why you guys can resist the bat. But the metal bat is a blessing. The body tries to take in more of its effects. There is no resistance to blessings. There's no way the body would refuse to take in blessings. And you all know that blessings stack, right? Curses

stack as well, but it isn't as effective.”

“Then...”

“Right. The pain inflicted by the metal bat increases over time. But while we feel all the pain, the body doesn't recognize it as pain. Only the brain thinks of it as pain. While we get hit by the metal bat, the body begins to modify itself to take in more of the bat's effects.”

“No way... There's no way that only the brain would take in pain, while the body doesn't!”

We all nodded at 17's remark. Is there a blessing that creates pain? Who in their right minds would make such a th...

“If it's the instructor, he can make it.”

The substitute instructor seemed to have read my thoughts and sighed.

“You guys are mistaken about something here. The instructor just can't use magic. It's not that he doesn't know it. No, he knew that if he didn't know more about magic, he wouldn't be able to take on wizards, which motivated him to study more.”

“But he can't use magic!”

“So what? He just needs someone who knows magic. Just this bat alone has tens of different enchantments on it.”

“...Just who would help a villain like him?”

“A different race.”

Our eyes widened the instant we heard this.

“But even the Empire manages to do small deals with them at best?”

“No way! There’s no way a different race would teach magic to a human!”

“...It might be possible for him.”

“Yeah. That man... I’m not sure if he even is a man. Anyway, 46 is right. It’s possible for the instructor. I even got to meet a dwarf once...”

“Wow... I heard it was super hard to meet one.”

Dwarves. Apparently, the throne of the emperor was made by dwarves. Apparently, the sword of the Sword Saint was made by dwarves. Apparently, some count gifted the emperor a sword made by dwarves on the emperor’s birthday.

Something that was made by dwarves almost always became big news. But almost all news about it is actually fake. For example, it was proved that out of all the news from the above paragraph; only the throne was made by dwarves!

If the instructor was able to meet those dwarves, he had an enormous economic value for being able to do just that.

“He’s treated as something like a half-dwarf.”

“Is he a half?”

“No. Honorary Blacksmith? Or was it Researcher? Anyway, he’s kind of like an elder there.”

“.....”

“.....”

“...Is it amazing?”

46 seemed to be confused, but 17 and I were extremely surprised. Dwarves have a king. But it is merely a symbol. The dwarven king is just there to call on the dwarves in an emergency. He has no real power.

The true king of dwarves are the elders.

It is said that there are 12 different clans of dwarves, and in each of those clans, there are three elders. The ones that control a single clan would be those three elders. Those elders are the ones that control the dwarves, and those elders are the ones who elect a new king. They even have the power to replace the king whenever they want.

Of course, all kings of the dwarves have been direct descendants of the first king.

In any case, an elder is like a noble in the dwarven world.

Having a human as a dwarven elder is something unheard of in the history of the world.

These dwarves, who possess the mind and soul of a noble craftsman, are not tempted by anything, and they...

“Ah, I think this bat was made by dwarves as well?”

...I take back what I said earlier. Dwarves are not supposed to exist in this world. They must all die!

“I don’t know if it’s true, but the metal bat was supposed to be the second strongest demonic weapon they made?”

“What the hell is that supposed to mean.”

“Ah, I think their strongest demonic weapon was supposed to be the Evil Blood Sword?”

“...Hold on! What the hell? That just makes this all seem even truer?! Isn't the Evil Blood Sword ranked as the 3rd strongest demonic weapon in the continent?!”

17 let out a sharp cry saying this. What was it supposed to be? A sword that kills ten with a single stroke, any wounds afflicted by that sword will not stop bleeding, and the sword will always remember the location of the person struck by it?

I feel like the Evil Blood Sword's better than the metal bat to an extent. You die an easy death. But an upgraded version of the bat? It would mean eternal pain... The reason why the Evil Blood Sword is ranked in the top ten demonic swords in the continent is that it can track down its opponents and kill them, but the metal bat would keep hitting once its victim was hit at least once...

We could simply tremble as we thought more about what the metal bat would be like.

The substitute instructor quietly declared this as he looked at us tremble.

“Hide the fact that you developed resistance. It isn't like it doesn't hurt even with the resistance, so keep screaming with pain. Do not resist. Once you break the rule... The silver light will lead you to the world of endless pain.”

What is this pressure I'm feeling from this all of the sudden? The only thing that we could do was to nod quietly.

And at that time.

“Defend!”

Baaang! An explosion rang out along with the substitute instructor's shout. No, to be more specific, a red fire struck all of us.

“Rein of the information department, leave the area immediately.”

A group of black-clothed men immediately surrounded us.

“You seem to belong to the Organization. What is it?”

The substitute instructor suddenly lets out a frigid voice and began to emit an extremely dangerous aura. Wow, honestly, this is the kind of thing that makes me wonder why he's a host, but then I look at his face... Mm, faces are important for jobs like those.

After thinking this, I was surprised by a single thought. What is this, this is an extremely critical situation, and yet I'm not panicked at all. And I realized. I didn't think of this as a dangerous situation.

I was surrounded by 20 assassins, but I wasn't panicked... This made me realize: Ah... The instructor was a monster. The former disciple of the instructor honestly seems more dangerous than all the assassins. Mm... is it the bat that's more dangerous?

“We will terminate the current disciples of Naruan.”

I flinched inside upon hearing this. W, was I found out?

“...The reason being?”

“Rebellion.”

“You guys rebelled?”

“No?”

“I was too busy getting hit.”

“...Not interested.”

“They say they didn't rebel?”

Ha, as expected of that man's disciples.

“...The fact that that man trained them like that is a rebellion in itself. The fact that he trained the descendants of the Raina family



and the Nermia family is a crime. They are direct descendants, too, which makes things even worse.”

“...I’m not, though?”

46 seemed to be confused. Then...

“The direct descendant of the wizard family?”

“A part of the imperial family?”

Hoho, the world must be coming to an end or something. Why would a descendant of the Nermia family come to an evil organization... No, before that, why would a person like this be so attached to food?!

I looked at the girl with a surprised face... I feel that the way that girl’s looking at me might be similar to my expression. No, it’s probably the same. Come to think of it, I was in the imperial family, huh. A person of the imperial family succumbed to club and food...

17’s face scrunched up and seemed to have reached the same conclusion as me. We both sighed.

“How troublesome.”

“Indeed.”

The substitute instructor looked at us with wide eyes and shouted.

“R, really? The descendants of the Raina family, and the Nermia family? Direct descendants, at that?!”

“...I’m not.”

17 puffed up her cheeks. She seemed dissatisfied about something.

“If you understand, please move.”

“I don’t want to?”

“...Are you rebelling as well?”

“Well... Living as a host isn’t all too bad, and I can protect myself to a degree as well. Plus... I’m the instructor right now.”

The instructor took out his sword and smiled as he said this, which accentuated his beauty. But.

“Cheesy.”

“I’m the instructor right now... Boring. Like rice.”

“...Rice is tasty. Do not insult rice.”

Our sensitivity to just about anything seems to be pretty much done for at this point.

“Hey! You bastards! Am I helping you out right now? You should be thankful right now?”

When we heard this, we just smirked.

“That’s supposed to be dangerous?”

“That?”

“Not really.”

“...Fine, you guys are awesome and shit. Damn it.”

The substitute instructor smirked along with us.

“5 per person. Anyone that’s left at the end is mine!”

Right before we were able to respond, however.

“Sorry, I can’t accept that deal. Even fighting 20 would hurt my

pride.”

A soft voice rang out in the area. When everyone looked at where the voice had come from, my eyes widened.

“Sword Saint?”

Why’s that old woman here?

## Chapter 3. Aah... I'm Screwed... (12)

---

“Sword Saint?”

What’s that old woman doing here?

“S, Sword Saint?”

The substitute instructor widened his eyes as he looked at me.

“L, liar! There’s no way that damn clubber would be a Sw...”

Bang!

Something passed by me. To be more specific, the substitute instructor was kicked by the Sword Saint and went flying off into the distance.

“...Why did you come here?”

“Hm? Who were you again?”

Her face of curiosity was quite charming. A healthy young man would normally fall for her in an instant, but... You mustn’t be fooled.

There are many people in the world who can control energy. The

effects you can get from being able to control it are many. One of them, maintaining youth, is something that all females strive to achieve.

This is something that goes against the flow of the world, and therefore it uses quite a bit of energy. But women still use that energy anyway.

That Sword Saint over there's probably as old as the instructor. If I remember correctly, she's in her 4...

Slash!

“...I feel like you just thought about something insulting?”

“I, I didn't? I, in any case, I'm the one from the Raina Family...”

“Ah, the boy from the Imperial Family the oldie told me about? Then what about Nermia?”

“M, me...”

17 raised her hands slowly and made a confused face.

“Ah, really? Hm, do I have to take care of the folks around you?”

With those words, the Sword Saint's sword drew a wide arc in

the air.

“Kuaa!”

“W, what the!”

“D, dodge!”

One strike. That was all it took to take care of everyone.

No other words were needed. Just a single swing of a sword, and everything was destroyed.

“...As I thought, we’re all just normal.”

“Right.”

“...Monster.”

“Ehe, don’t address me like that~ I don’t like it~”

The woman walked around with a life sword that seemed to be about 10 meters long while humming a few songs. She’s almost like a god of destruction. Even so, she still tries to act like a cute young girl.

She’s over 40, but she...

Slice

“Why do I want to cut off that part of your body so much? A woman’s instinct? Are you thinking of insults about me, boy?”

“O, of course not! Why would I t, think of such vulgar things in front of someone as beautiful as you?!”

I’d love it if you didn’t put your sword against my neck with a grin?!

“Well, whatever. Let’s run.”

“No wait, before that, why are you here...”

“Mn? Ah, that old man from Nermia told me to bring back his granddaughter. You’re just extra.”

“Did he know that we got found out already?”

“No, the Emperor’s about to trash this place.”

Mm, her rude personality hasn’t changed at all. I recall seeing her swear at the emperor a long time ago. In any case.

“But you don’t seem like the person who’d do something just because the master of the wizard’s tower told you to do it?”



Right. This person, the Sword Saint, was very self-centered, was weak to compliments, and would beat up anyone who insulted her.

This Sword Saint answered my question with a short, concise answer.

“The old man told me that he’d give me a magic sword?”

“...Don’t sword masters like you just use stuff like wooden sticks?”

I never heard of anyone using a sword of any kind hold a sword master title before. But the Sword Saint scrunched up her face, and told us something extremely shocking.

“Ha? Well, those guys called sword masters and whatnot do carry around wooden sticks and use it to cut up knights. But that’s super hard to do, you know? Why do I have to do something annoying like that? Humans are different from animals because they can use tools. Therefor, it is good to get ahold of powerful tools. The Sword Saint before me said that he could win against me with a wooden stick, but he got utterly destroyed after his weapon got chopped up by my mithril sword. He wouldn’t have lost that badly if he used something like a iron sword? And it’s not like Sword Saints are banned from using magic swords.”

...I’m never gonna use a wooden stick if I get titled as a sword master.

No, wait. Maybe it'd be alright to use the bat...?

“In any case, what shall we do about him?”

The woman pointed her sword at the substitute instructor, who was currently stuck at a wall away from us. Her doing that made her look like a crazy woman with all the blood around her. But the thing was, she's actually half-crazy. There's no cure to the princess disease...

Swish!

“W, why are you pointing that at me again...”

“Mm... The will of the heavens? A woman's instinct? You choose.”

“...L, let's call it a woman's instinct.”

“Wait! This isn't the time to do th... Big sis! S, stop fiddling with that corpse over there!”

I saw that 17 was looking somewhere with a pale face, and turned to where she was looking. There, I could see 46 searching the dead bodies trying to find anything that could be worth some cash.

“...You're a noble, but I'm still your big sis?”

“T, that’s not important...” I don't like this... this is not the original translator's site!

“It is.”

46 annoyedly spoke with puffed up cheeks. Her voice didn’t seem to serious, but her eyes were.

“...Yes, you’re still my big sis.”

“...Would you be willing to give up breakfast for me?”

“T, that’s too much.”

“Tch.”

“P, puhahaha~ what the heck, these kids are cute! I’m gonna take ’em and raise ’em!”

She’d have at least two kids older than them if she married early...

Swish!

“Why is it that I keep getting annoyed at you, even when you’re not saying anything?”

“I, I don’t know?”

The Sword Saint glared at me for a moment, then took her sword away and poked at the substitute instructor with her sheath.

“In any case, what should we do with this thing? I can’t let him live now that he knows my secret.”

“Let’s let him live? He’s our savio...”

Mm, wait a minute. Is he really our savior? He beat us with the bat until we gained resistance, then he beat us even more... Mm?

A single wooden stick could be seen on the substitute instructor’s right hand.

Gulp.

Mm... Mmm...

“Hn? What is it?”

The Sword Saint looked at me strangely when she saw me approach, but my eyes were just focused on the substitute instructor’s right hand. I, if it’s now...

“Why not let him live? He tried to protect us by... hup!”

L, let go, damn it! Let me try holding the bat!

“Hmm... he’s a potential ace in the shop he works in, so it would be profitable for me if I just made a decent deal with the owner there, but... what the hell are you doing?”

“Y, you don’t have to worry about it.”

“Well... it’s kind of hard to ignore.”

I tried to pry out the bat from the substitute instructor’s hand, but it refused to come out, like a certain sword stuck in a stone.

“...Me too.”

“I want it as well!”

17 and 46 arrived before I even noticed them, and looked at the bat with eyes of greed.

“...Just what in the world are you kids doing...”

The Sword Saint sighed, and lifted her foot lightly...

W, wait! It’s better to just kill him instead...

“Gaaaah!”

The substitute instructor’s eyes became rounder than anything else I’d seen in the past. An endless scream of pain rose up the man’s throat, and he let it all out as he... grasped the spot that had been stepped on with his hands.

“I, I’m... infer...tile?!”

“It still isn’t too late! Quick, we have to get you emergency, no, immediate treatment!”

I shared his pain as a fellow male as I massaged his waist. These people do not know this pain. Because of this, they looked at us with confused faces... except the Sword Saint. She was grinning behind everyone else.

“Tehee?”

Just look at that damn face. Where would you ever get the impression that she was over 4...

“How strange. I keep disliking you more and more? You really aren’t insulting me in your head?”

“O, of course I’m not.”

I'm just thinking of your age.

“Well, that’s that. Now we have to run before the emperor’s people get here to trash this place.”

When the Sword Saint said this with a shrug, 17 seemed to have remembered something, and shouted.

“N, no! I still haven’t found that thing...”

“...Me neither.”

Well, I just came here to survive, but it looks like these two other kids had some other objective. I think the instructor actually talked about it in the past... Mm?

“Um, wouldn’t the instructor know about its whereabouts?”

I had a feeling that might be the case, so I said it, and turned to the substitute instructor. The man nodded and confirmed my suspicions to be true.

“Probably? That man knows almost everything about the organization.”

“Nn? He’s just an instructor but he knows that much?”

When the Sword Saint asked this question at the substitute instructor, the man took a step back with a frightened face, and answered her.

“One of the higher ups in the information department stalks the instructor.”

His face then paled, and he began to mumble something along the lines of “That’s why... Urk... just die...” Mm... looks like this senior from the information department is pretty dangerous as well.

“So we just have to find that instructor? But wouldn’t he be in danger if the organization’s after him?”

“Mm... he would be in danger, but I don’t really see him dying at all.”

Yeah, I don’t see that happening either.

“But it’d be pretty hard to come in here given his situation right now, right?”

“Um, he probably has one or two secret bases around here, and he probably made several escape paths as well.”

“...Does the organization know about this?”



Even the great Sword Saint made a surprised face at this, but the substitute instructor shook his head.

“Nah, they probably don’t even know anything. We even contributed to making several of those escape paths. I recall trying to get into one of them, but it was filled with 12 different traps. When we cleared all the traps, the path just turned out to be fake.”

“...What the, is this place really supposed to be the empire’s most powerful evil organization?”

Nah, this organization’s normal. It’s pretty powerful, and it also has just about everything sorted out. It’s just the instructor who’s really weird...

“Then what should we do?”

I asked this question, and the substitute instructor answered this question by pointing to the instructor’s home.

“We just have to wait there.”

“...Wait, this is the middle of the enemy base, you know? Even if we have the great... Sword Saint, but isn’t staying here dangerous?”

“Trust me. That place is probably safer than the organization’s boss’ room.”

Why does he sound like he's telling the truth? Everyone apart from the Sword Saint felt this strange trust at the substitute instructor's words. We all seemed hypnotized as we walked into the instructor's home.

"Mm... was this it... no, was this it?"

As soon as he walked in, the substitute instructor began fiddling with various candleholders on the wall.

"Ah, found it."

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

"...Wow."

Steel plates descended from the door and the windows, and effectively sealed all the entrances to the house.

"Was your instructor some kind of a hero who tried to fight the organization or something? Why the heck did he make something like this here?"

"Ahaha, this is nothing, sis."

"Why are you calling me sis?"

“I used to call you that a lot back at the... hum, hum, it’s nothing. In any case, there are devices in the second floor that even seals off the first floor completely, and activates all the traps inside it. I think there’s even more, but that’s about all I know.”

The substitute instructor went back to fiddling with various objects in the room, moved over to the instructor’s office and our rooms, and fiddled with a few more things before sighing in relief.

“Done! We should be safe unless some weirdos bring a catapult to attack us.”

“Mm... so we just have to wait?”

“Yup! The instructor probably has 20 different paths that connect to this house.”

“Well, I’ll be sitting in that chair while we wait, then. So tell me about this instructor. I don’t want to kill him by accident.”

The substitute instructor became troubled after hearing this.

“Mm... how shall I describe him?”

Suddenly, a brilliant idea flashed in my mind. As I thought, I was a genius. Mm, I’m a genius!

“He’s very strong!”

Everyone turned to me when I said this. I put on an extremely evil face, and continued talking.

“He’s a veeeery strong swordsman. If he turns out to be strong after you hit him, he’s probably the instructor.”

Apart from the Sword Saint, everyone let out a small “ah” after hearing this. Right, no matter how strong the instructor is, the Sword Saint should be too much for him!

“R, right! He’s super strong!”

“...You might actually lose?”

The Sword Saint flinched a little at the last statement, made an amused face (there was a vein popping out on her forehead), and smiled lightly.

“Really? So... I can try to half-kill him?”

After saying that, the Sword Saint exited the room with a bang.

“...You guys are gonna get in trouble if he finds out?”

I just shrugged at the substitute instructor’s words.

“Even so, don’t you want to... see him lose?”

The substitute instructor actually seemed to be tempted by my devilish words.

“Well, I do want to see it...”

Time passed, and we all stood waiting with great anticipation.

Bang!

Did something hit a wall just now?

“Huaaaahn~”

...I must be imagining things. Did I just hear a woman scream?

The substitute instructor opened the door slightly to see what was going on.

Am I hallucinating? Did I just see the Sword Saint fall over?

S, she’s supposed to be the Sword Saint, right?

Our eyes met with those of the instructor’s at this precise

moment.

“...Close the door.”

“Right.”

“N, nhoooo! H, Hel... hahn!”

After closing the door, I kept hearing this moan-like scream behind it.

And.

“...It’s all your fault.”

“R, right!”

“You’re the one who put the Sword Saint against the instructor?”

“Ah, w, wait...”

My head went dull at this moment. But even in this state, I was able to quickly reach a conclusion.

...Ahh... I’m screwed.

## Chapter 3. Ahh... I'm Screwed... (13)

---

I managed to block a sword strike with my metal bat. S, she didn't even use any energy yet! Why's that blow so strong?!

I, is she actually a woman?!

-H, haahn... W, what's this? A new feeling... a different kind of pleasure...

Oh fuck, this damn sadist is about to become a masochist as well. I must prevent this catastro...

“What about this, then?”

Never mind! Survival comes first!

Once again, I parried the downward stroke from the Sword Saint. This time, she used energy, but my metal bat should be able to take it!

“Kuh.”

Uaaaah! Hurts! I feel like my hand exploded! So what if the metal bat can take the blow? I can't!

I managed to somehow endure this immense pain, but then I saw the Sword Saint grin hugely at me.

“You managed to take it? What about this, then?”

A life sword twice as big as before drew an arc towards my head. M, my room... Ah! I immediately changed the form of the metal bat into that of a long pole, and stabbed at a certain place next to the Sword Saint.

“Mn? What are you... what’s this?”

I took back the pole, and stepped back as I blocked her attack. The attack earlier was something that I shouldn’t have been able to block, but.

“...What in the world is this?”

The Sword Saint looked at her sword in confusion. The thing was still flowing with energy, but that energy was not as vibrant as before. Actually, the fact that it even contained any energy surprised me.

The place that I stabbed was my desk. To be more precise, it was the Life Sword Restrictor on the desk. It’s a device that temporarily cuts away an organism’s link to the earth and the sky.

Because of that, it should be impossible for a person to use the Life Sword... This must mean that woman has enough energy in her body to partially form a Life Sword?! How is that even making sense? Is she cheating?



But there was no time to ponder on that thought any longer. This was only a prototype. It could explode at any time! I, I need to finish this quick!

But I am a user of the club, while my enemy uses the sword. Of course, this weapon of mine is quite special, but the enemy is someone known as a Sword Saint. This person may actually be able to resist the metal bat.

I've only used this thing against little kids before... but my enemy this time is an expert. I might die after a single hit.

Even so, I still used my own sword arts. A simple stab transforms into a different form of an attack. That attack then changes yet again into a simple stab.

My sword arts are unconventional. It is something that I modified to fit my fighting style. It is not actually an actual sword arts. But sometimes, "sword arts" like these are better than actual sword arts!

I've managed to live so far by annoying, fooling, and tiring out my opponents. But.

"This is... no fun!"

The Sword Saint broke through my attacks immediately. There are actually less female soldiers than there are female knights. This

is because women normally have lower physical abilities than men, which prevents them from utilizing energy too much. But this Sword Saint over here's using energy in a place where it is completely restricted. I suppose you really can't become a Sword Saint through pure luck, huh. Also, her being able to do this would mean...

Clang! Clang!

I'm screwed!

Uaaah! My hand!

-H, haahn... what's this? It's weaker than before, b, but... feels good...

Ahh... crap. Besides my hand hurting, that damned S is now an M as well. And... its voice is that of a young girl! W, what the hell! I feel like I'm gonna get arrested for this! I feel like I'm gonna be put on an electric chair for this!

[Please, just shut up!]

-Hnnng~ I, insult me more!

Gaaah! I'm gonna get arrested for sure!

I need to get out of this situation asap. Seeing how there's this

weird crackling noises coming from my desk, the device probably didn't have much juice left.

If it turns off... that means I'd be greeted by that scary strong Life Sword again... Then...

“Haah!”

I smashed my foot against the floor. With that, the mysterious technology known as the spring got activated beneath the floor! The Sword Saint flinched a little, and that was all I needed.

Stab

Kuaaaa! Hurts! Damn it! I pushed my shoulder into the sword that was coming my way. Because of the residual energy inside the sword, my shoulder was stabbed through cleanly.

But with this, you cannot dodge my attacks now!

Vuun!

“Hup!”

The woman blocked the metal bat with her arm. But this thing isn't something that can be blocked through normal means!

Crack!

The Sword Saint blocked my attack with her left arm. Now, she should...

“...”

Be screaming...

“...”

D, did it not work?

“...”

Can Sword Saints resist the metal bat or something? I’ve sacrificed my shoulder for this, though? Am I screwed? Am I royally screwed in the ass now? Dead?

As I thought all these thoughts, my eyes met with those of the Sword Saint’s.

The Sword Saint, who was staring at me with empty eyes, began to move her mouth.

“...Hue...”

Somehow, a sound that was far too cute for a woman over 40 came out of her mouth.

And once I saw that the Sword Saint’s eyes were beginning to water, I tightened my grip on my weapon.

“Time for your punishment.”

“Nhooo... Hurts...”

“You mean yes?”

Crack!

The metal bat strikes the unguarded waist full force! The Sword Saint falls down on her knees with a “Huaaa~”.

“I, I’m a fragile woman...”

“If you’re supposed to be fragile, I suppose knights are fragile enough to get blown away by the wind, huh?”

Crack!

“Haahn!”

-Aah... F, feels good!

[Just stay being an S, damn it!]

I didn’t stop beating the Sword Saint even as I shouted at my weapon.

Bang!

“Hoh...”

I suppose she really is a Sword Saint for a reason. Even when she was in great pain, she managed to dodge my attack. However.

Crack

“Haaahn~”

With that strike, the Sword Saint fell on her legs for good. I turned to the kids who were watching me with dumb faces through the door, and...

“...Close the door.”

“Right.”

“N, nhoooo! H, Hel... hahn!”

Crack!

I hit the Sword Saint one more time when I saw that she was trying to run. Being merciful because she's a woman? Don't joke with me. That thing's no woman. It's a Sword Saint. Why'd I be merciful when I can get sliced in half if I let my guard down?

-Where are you running, girl~ You can't run away from this elder sis...

[She's in her 40s.]

-Holy... what the heck... give me back my purity...



I ignored the metal bat that was screaming in pure sadness, and

Crack!

“H, hahn!”

Crack!

“H, huee...”

Crack!

“Hnng... Auuh...”

-M, master... I don't like this.. I'm not into old women...

[She looks fine on the outside, though?]

-Then you shouldn't have told me... sob... why...

[I felt like it.]

After I pushed away that moaning mess into a corner, I went into the room where the kids were.

“Hee!”

“...”

“H, hic!”

“I, instructor!”

What a reaction. Well, apart from that.

“Report.”

When I turned to Rein, he coughed a few times, and explained what was going on for me.

“Since the kids are direct descendants of nobles, the Organization’s trying to kill you. And since the Empire’s trying to trash the Organization, you’re about to become jobless.”

...He explained everything too well.

# **Chapter 4 - And So Their Story Begins**

# Chapter 4. And So Their Story Begins. (1)

---

“We’re running.”

After taking the bat back from Rein, and after listening more about what had happened, I decided to run. Even though this place was the strongest evil organization on the continent, it was all because it was the biggest evil organization in the Empire.

In other words, Howling was treated as the strongest evil organization because the Empire was the strongest in the continent. If the Empire decides to attack Howling, it would mean that Howling would be done for!

The only reason why they were alive till now was because of the villages I set up on the outskirts. Without those, we’d have been dead already.

“No!”

“...I have something to find.”

But there were people who opposed my proposition. Who were they? My disciples. Hoho, why are all my disciples so strange? I thought I tried to raise them all normally.

“Do you children have two lives or something?”

I lowered my voice as I said this. Well, I didn't think it would really work, though.

"It's more important than my life!"

"...Me too."

As I thought, girls are more stubborn than boys. 102 simply glared at me, but didn't say anything. The girls, on the other hand, wouldn't back down.

"What are you trying to find?"

"...The family heirloom."

"Vengeance for my parents."

Hmm, is it just me, or do these sound like something that would come out of a novel?

"...Explain."

"This organization stole our family's heirloom."

"...My parents were taken away."

Mm... 46 is talking as if her parents had died, but the

organization wouldn't do something as wasteful as that, so we might be able to find them in one of the outskirt villages... Mm... And that heirloom... Did I steal it? I'm listening to the girl tell me what it looks like, and it feels like I saw something like it in the past? To be more specific, I feel like I saw it in the secret safe of mine?

“So... it has a lily carved out of white gold on it...”

Mmm... I think I stole something like that before... Was it a lily, though? No, all flowers pretty much look the same, but I do feel like I took something from the Nermia family before... Mm...

“D, do you know about it?”

Wow, those expectant eyes really are pressuring. Sorry, I think I was the one who stole it.

“Do you really need it?”

“Yes!”

I'll think a bit before answering. Should I just force her to leave, or should I just give it to her? ...I should give it to her, right? If I get caught not giving it to her by the troops outside, I might die, right?

“Mm... I'll look for it.”

Stop looking at me like that... ugh, so much guilt...

“46, your parents are probably still alive.”

“Really?”

I think this was the first time I saw her reply this past? In any case, I nodded, and turned to Rein.

“Did the organization kill anyone recently?”

“Mm, our members died a lot recently, but when it comes to civilians, only 5 died. We wouldn't really touch country folk. There are bad rumors sometimes when a beautiful woman comes, but we aren't low enough to touch a normal family.”

“I have heard something about you going for married women nowadays, though?”

Rein's face turned red when everyone looked at him with cold eyes.

“T, those are just false rumors spread by my senior, so that I wouldn't be able to become No. 1 in the club!”

...Ah, come to think of it, he's not too far from becoming No. 1, huh. If he keeps doing his job well, he might actually become like

Swal... wait, does that kind of a knight actually... exist here?

“In any case... Run for now. I’ll sort out a few things and leave.”

“...What about that, then?”

Rein pointed to the Sword Saint and asked this. What do you think, dear Rein? What do you think we’ll do with her?

“Throw her away.”

“...She’s the Sword Saint, though?”

“Yeah, she probably wouldn’t die even if we leave her like this. No, if she goes serious, we’d all die.”

“...Where shall we put her?”

I nodded towards the fellow, who paled immediately. Good, you learned well. You haven’t forgotten that survival is your ultimate objective.

“Just leave her. It would be annoying if she were to wake.”

I moved the desk away, and opened the floor under it.

“Go through this path. If the path splits, just go left.”



“What about you?”

“I’m going to sort out a few things. You just take the kids.”

“...You aren’t going to run, are you?”

“Being near the children is the safest way to escape from the Empire’s attack.”

“Ah, right.”

Rein nodded after hearing my words, and I nodded back. Yup, I’m running. I beat the kids of a noble family to oblivion, there’s no way I’d get out safely. I’ll just leave Rein to be the scapegoat, and run secretly.

“Leaven, then.”

After watching the kids all leave one by one, I approached my secret safe and began trying to open it.

“It’s just the two of us now, huh?”

W, what the... Before I was even able to turn, some kind of a cold metal touched my neck.

-You're screwed.

D, don't say that.

## Chapter 4. And So Their Story Begins. (2)

---

-You're screwed.

D, don't say that.

I was unable to even calm down from my surprise. She was actually conscious?

"You were waiting?"

I said this as calmly as I could, but... I'm afraid. Am I gonna die? Is this it for me?

"...O, of course. Did you think a Sword Saint would be beaten by a mere stick?"

The Sword Saint seemed to get pissed by my question. But... her voice faltered just now, right?

"Then, just one more hit..."

"S, shut up!"

...My head almost went flying from that taunt. Thankfully, I barely managed to dodge, but I could still feel blood flow down from the new wound on my neck.

“W, who says I got done in by the bat?!”

I need to get her to be agitated. It’s all over once she regains her calm. For now, I took out the bat again.

Shf

Flinch!

“...You seem scared.”

“W... who says I am?!”

The Sword Saint began to run towards me. Her eyes were on the bat, though! I put my left hand in my pockets, and activated Sand Spray!

“W, what the! You unfair bastard!”

“There is no unfairness in a fight!”

The sand went directly into her eyes! It was super effective!

I just need to get in a single hit like before. I thought this, and quickly ran towards the Sword Saint.

“Haah!”

Shudder!

Bang!

The moment I took a step back out of instinct, the Sword Saint's Life Sword sliced open the sky.

“ ... ”

As I said, she literally cut open the sky. The roof was gone. There's nothing above me. I can see the sky. Hoho... I could see the Sword Saint rub her eyes as she mumbled a few words out of rage. In her right hand was her sword shining in a blindingly blue light.

-Master, what now? That's scary.

[Run, of course.]

Fight that thing now? No way. My body right now is in a really bad shape.

-Where to, though?

...I wonder. There is a secret path at the place where the desk used to be, but would the Sword Saint let me run?

“...Die.”

Was it because of the sand in her eyes? Or was it because she was in berserker mode? In any case, her red eyes combined with her killing intent made it hard to use.

Escape through the window? Not possible. It's covered with steel.

The door? It has traps all over it.

The secret path? The Sword Saint is blocking it.

-Master, I was happy to have met you...

[...No comment.]

I'd have come up with a comeback in the past, but I didn't really feel up to it right now. The reason why the Sword Saint's sword was shining so brightly was because she was circulating energy in her body as well.

The reason why there are more female knights than soldiers is because of the energy. The energy's power completely transcends that of the human body. If I were to fight the Sword Saint right now, my body would be split in half.

Why not use my sword arts on her? You know, such things can only be used when you can see your opponent. Right now, I could die before I even know it. If the Sword Saint really does go all out, my head would be separated from my body before I even know it.

Like this, my hope for survival began to dim. But right then, behind the Sword Saint, a head popped up from the entrance to the

secret passage, and made eye contact with me.

The owner of that head, Rein, seemed to be saying this with his eyes.

[Ah, sorry. I think I came to the wrong place.]

I widened my eyes as far as I could, and sent back my message.

[You came to the right place!]

At the same time, I shouted as loudly as I could.

“Now! Attack!”

For a single moment, the Sword Saint’s surprised eyes met with Rein’s.

“What the hell are you doing here?”

“N, nothing!”

“Then why are you... Where do you think you’re going!”

A scary strong attack flew towards me, and... it broke the door and secured my escape!



“Wait!”

While I was trying to see if I would break just like that door if I tried to run, small heads began popping up besides Rein.

“Wait my ass.”

“E, even so! I can’t find the heirloom without you!”

I prayed that 17 wouldn’t be able to see the secret safe in the corner, and spoke calmly.

“Well, you’re right.”

You’re right, so please let me live.

But the angered Sword Saint seemed to not care.

“I’ don’t give a damn about your heirloom?”

The length of the energy from the sword expanded from 40cm to 2m. I feel like I’d be stabbed the moment I take a step forward.

“W, wait! Then, the Nermia family will...”

“Just make a new one.”

“...”

Hoho, that sword just keeps getting bigger? I think a 10m long Life Sword is too much for an ordinary guy like me? You should at least give me a chance to escape?

“Stop!”

102 glared at the Sword Saint, and shouted.

“...Was that shout directed towards me, kid?”

The Sword Saint glared back at 102. But the kid did not flinch even one bit.

“You have an obligation to protect us, do you not?”

“I don’t. My family can’t even control me, you know? There’s no way I’d have an obligation to protect anyone.”

The Acerid family. This family was famous for creating multiple Sword Saints in the past, and was also famous for having very strict rules in the family.

The one who stepped all over those rules was the current Sword

Saint. This person was literally someone who would go “Obligation? What kind of a food is that?”

However, 102 simply smiled as he muttered “but” quietly.

“It would be annoying for you to go against the imperial decree, right?”

The Sword Saint’s eyes narrowed right then.

“It is. So why not kill everyone and erase evidence?”

At that moment, Rein’s face disappeared. He didn’t run, he just fell back from surprise. I could hear something roll down the secret passage, and heard a scream as well. Hoho, to think he’d actually roll down a set of stairs, the greatest murder weapon in a certain manga.

As I thought trivial thoughts, I began to slowly turn to the door. The boy pissed off the Sword Saint.

Sword Saint.

A saint of the sword arts. It indicated one of the five people who had the title of the sword, and the title was bestowed upon the swordsman who achieved great deeds in a generation.

Only the Sword Emperor can block someone like a Sword Saint.

I pissed off this person? I'm dead!

[He managed to piss off the Sword Saint... he's dead for sure.]

-You pissed her off a lot more than the boy did?

...That's why I'm really nervous right now. FYi, you're probably gonna die after me, dear bat.

Was it because my life was on stake instead of his? 102 simply smiled even more after hearing the Sword Saint's words.

“Really? Go ahead and kill everyone, then.”

That bastard... is he trying to go down with me?

# Chapter 4. And So Their Story Begins. (3)

---

## 4.5 Their Story

[1] Serr Al Acerid: Ah, I wish... this wasn't real...

“Really? Go ahead and kill everyone, then.”

The golden-haired kid stared at me with a grin on his face.

Normally, I'd just have killed... actually, no. Normally, I'd just have beat him up really badly.

But I can't do anything. Was it because he was a descendant of the Emperor? No. Not even the emperor's sons would dare do anything to me. His daughter is a bit troublesome, but she couldn't do something like that. Seeing the emperor's son's cousin do something like this would make me beat him to a pulp, but...

The problem lies in the fact that this kid is supposed to kill the demon king.

I'm not talking about any normal demon king either. I'm talking about the one that's an actual danger to the world.

See, this world actually has three different types of demon kings.

First, the demon king.

The king of the demon race.

Of course, there aren't many demon tribes that got together to form an actual country, but there are several demon nations out there.

Second, the demon king.

The spelling and pronunciation of it is no different from the first one, but this is supposed to be the ruler of demons sent by the Evil God.

These demon kings are bestowed with major blessings from the Evil God. The ones that manage to survive the blessings go on to become the demon king.

Unlike the Excalibur, where you could just leave if you failed, the blessing would kill you if you failed. If you didn't die, you'd become king.

Third, the demon king.

Again, written and pronounced the same.

But it's different from the other two.

This demon king fights humans, but trades with them as well.

This is the same for humans. They fight each other, then trade with each other.

In other words, the this demon king isn't friendly or evil, but neutral. The only thing different about the demon king compared to the human king would be his race.

The second kind of demon kings are mythical beings, just like the excalibur.

The one that would unite all the demons in the world. It might as well be called an emperor.

This is actually a bad thing for us humans. Why? Because in the myths regarding this demon king, it is said that this particular one would bring humans to ruin.

But the last kind of demon king is different.

It's basically a final boss that would take in all the evil in the world, and bring the world to ruin.

If the last demon king was the king of the demon race, this one is the king of all demonic evils. Many say that this thing is just a myth, but I know for a fact that it is real. I know that it would appear in this world soon as well.

I also happen to know that the annoying kid in front of me would have to fight the demon king as well.

I'm actually a proph... actually, no. The reason why I know this is... I read about it.

Mm, I read it. I read it from a novel. From a different world.

I can still remember that time when I bought the novel. I thought it was a romance novel and got all excited about it, but it turned out to be a fantasy novel. I was still pretty excited about reading it, but the main character turned out to be an extremely kind idiot with super chuuni skills. I actually named it as one of the forbidden texts a long time ago, and only read it whenever I got really bored.

The main character of that novel activated a forbidden skill while fighting the demon king, swore at his author, who hadn't been writing anything for over two years, then died.

So... by making use of the tidbits of information the author put in the novel, I managed to get all the mystical treasures the villains were supposed to get. Then, I beat up the previous Sword Saint with a Orihalcon Sword, and became the current Sword Saint... though I thought I was helping the world become peaceful by doing that...

I lost my status as a great Sword Saint because of that disgusting weapon, so I tried to take out some of my stress... but that damn kid suddenly got in my way!



The strange thing is, Raina Rel Swin isn't supposed to be such an arrogant bastard. He's doing this precisely because he knows I can't kill him.

Come to think of it, there's quite a lot of strange points in the current storyline. First, there's the imperial princess who sent me here before anyone else did. She was supposed to have died already in the battle for the throne.

But she's alive. The person who killed her was supposed to have died already as well, but because the imperial princess is alive, he's alive as well. In fact, he somehow managed to enter a strange evil organization for some reason.

No, before that, this Nermia kid right here should be in the Mage's Tower right now being lauded as a genius around this time, according to the normal storyline.

No, before that, a weapon that's capable of neutralizing a Sword Saint like me destroys the balance of the novel completely! I've never seen anything like that in the novel!

“You... I'll have a word with you later.”

The main character flinched when I glared at him, but he doesn't lose his smile... Isn't this thing supposed to be a novel? The main character was supposed to be a kind idiot who didn't even seem to have a penis... He wasn't like this in the novel!

Something's wrong with the story. All the things in this world matches up with the things in the novel, but something seems to have changed recently. I thought that someone else had read the novel like me, but... things are too quiet. No one else other than me touched items that appeared in the novel as of yet.

Everything's going along according to the plot, but all the main characters are a little strange.

“Take this.”

I threw an envelope at the old man who beat me mercilessly. That envelope was something the princess wrote, and it's currently taking over the entire imperial court.

She's not really doing anything out in the open as of yet, but she's raising the crown prince really well. By the time that man becomes king, she'd have quite a bit of power in her hands.

...The people who are supposed to have died are taking over the country...

I tried to imitate the person who was actually supposed to be the sword saint as much as possible to keep the story consistent. So what went wrong? The story isn't flowing right. And because of that, I have to suffer...

“What's this?”

Ha, just look at his cold voice. That kind of a voice only looks cool when a handsome boy in a reverse harem does it... if an old man like that does it... mm... it actually fits. He looks like a type of guy who beats the main character to hell, but secretly cares about the main character. Kind of like a person who'd appear in a book genre that starts with a B and ends with an L?

...I'm actually not into stuff like that, so let's just sweep what I said under the rug.

“Your previous employer sent it to you?”

“...Tell her I got it.”

Looking at how his face scrunched up after opening the envelope, I'm guessing the princess wrote a bunch of offensive stuff again. She's pretty crazy, you see. Come to think of it, the crown prince is pretty weird too... As expected talented people are all weird. Except me, of course.

## Chapter 4. And So Their Story Begins. (4)

---

...What's this?

The Sword Saint seems conflicted over hitting a boy that deserves to be smacked in the face. She then looked like she was about to hit him... but then she didn't.

-Ur alive?

[...No idea.]

-How lucky.

I tried to slowly move backwards while closely observing the conflicted Sword Saint.

“Take this.”

A thrown weapon?! was what I thought, but it was just an envelope. Hmm, the paper used on it looks pretty expensive.

“What's this?”

The Sword Saint takes a look at me when I ask this question... Woah, I'm getting the chills from her eyes. She's not looking at me with murderous intent, but my instincts are still screaming for some reason!

The first thing that came into my eyes when I opened the envelope was a needlessly fancy font that seemed somewhat familiar to me.

Now, let's read.

Congrats!

Congratulations for you losing your job!

Why did you choose such an unstable job in the first place?

But don't worry, the job Karuan is extremely stable, and is just waiting for you to take it!

So just come here quietly, yeah? Before I chain you and put you to work!

It's from my last boss.

...Hohoho, wtf?

I thought I was being secretive enough, but looks like I got found out. She even knows that I lost my job. Oh, who is this boss, you ask? Well, if I were to describe her, she is a very powerful, and wise princess of the empire, who the emperor loves to no end.

That was actually a lie!

This damned princess is someone who possesses a disgusting personality. Her guts of steel allows her to get into an argument with the Sword Saint over there, her extreme talent allows her to process the countless tasks that the empire handles every day, and her dirty personality allows her to hand over those tasks to her subordinates to show them true hell.

Well, the job Karuan is indeed very stable. I mean, it is a job in the empire, after all. If a job in the palace wasn't stable, where else would you work?! But that's it. It may be stable, but it's extremely tiresome.

Countless geniuses are produced in the lands of the empire. These geniuses all do whatever they can to work in the imperial palace. Those who landed a job in the imperial palace work frantically to advance to the top. Those that are already at the top? They work frantically do not go down.

Working frantically does indeed bring profits occasionally, but... the way these geniuses work is truly dirty.

Poison, assassination, bullying... the list just goes on and on.

To give an example of how bad things get, there was a time when the organization infiltrated the imperial palace with 120 members to attain a legendary metal known as Mistein. 4 people in total got found out, and died. 25 died in a political battle. 50 sided with the

wrong political party, and died for treason.

And after counting deaths by assassination and poison and the likes, only 17 came back...

As for that legendary metal Mistein, it was said that the infamous thief known as Acleá stole it... that's what everyone thinks, but in reality, I split it with the princess and the dwarves by 3:2:5. I was supposed to take 3, and the princess was supposed to take 4, but the dwarves took a part from each of us as a price for forging the metal.

And lo, the weapon that was forged out of my 2 and the dwarves' 5 was the metal bat.

Well, let's talk more about that some other time... in any case, the imperial palace is unfit for a human. Kids who are full of dreams and hopes might like the place, but for an old man like me, I cannot live in that hellish environment!

The imperial palace is the place where you can get all sorts of privileges if you become a demonic king, but it is also a place where you become the king's slave if you fail to be king! I don't want to be a slave, damn it! I just want to enjoy my retirement in a rural village!

But that "chain" part at the end of the letter scares me. Is she actually thinking about sticking me in a prison?

“What did your last boss say?”

The Sword Saint asked me this in a bored tone.

What shall I say...

“A congratulatory letter for me losing my job?”

When I said this with a slight frown, the Sword Saint grinned in joy for whatever reason, and went down the secret passage with the children. Mm... is she gone? She's gone, right? She's not gonna suddenly climb up and go chop chop, is she?

After a few seconds, I heard Rein's scream, and nodded. Yup, I'm safe. I guess I'll go back to opening the safe. Why am I safe, you ask? Well, you see, that scream probably resulted from one of two things. Either the Sword Saint got mad and began to beat up the kid, or one of the traps that I set up in the passage like giant boulders or arrow walls activated.

I wondered why traps were made like that when I saw them in comics a long time ago, but then I found out they were actually easy to make, and were also very reliable. It's not like you can create a field of magma, or create a pit full of sharks. Honestly, it's better to stick to traditional methods.

Anyway, I still activated several barricades to fully ensure my safety, and began to pour the contents of the safe into a bag I prepared beforehand.



“...So this is it.”

Let's not forget putting in that lily heirlo... actually, I'm not that good with flowers, so let's just use this flower heirloom. It's probably a lily, right? It's not a rose or anything?

Well, whatever. It's not like I have any other flower heirlooms other than this anyway... I guess I'll take these other heirlooms as well? And then...

-Uwah... so evil...

[I'm a villain, after all.]

What am I doing? Fabricating false evidence, of course!

Howling never stole anything like family heirlooms. Why would they, when they can always fabricate one that looks just like the real thing? And the families that get their heirlooms stolen go absolutely crazy over trying to take it back. It's just not worth stealing it.

But it's not like there actually isn't any value in stealing it. Family heirlooms are made of super expensive materials, meaning they're super expensive. But the part of the heirlooms that matter are the stamp bits that are created out of magic-refined wood. That's why I'm making it look like the organization used the heirlooms for some strange purpose. After all, I'd be killed in an

instant if people found out I was the one who stole the heirlooms.

[Is there any fake evidence we can come up with?]

-Mm... I only know what you know, so it'll be hard to come up with something too good... mm... ah! How about money laundering? They already used fake heirlooms to do that, so it should work out just fine.

[Oh, pretty good.]

With this, Howling has one more crime in its crime list! Oh boy, they're in big trouble now, aren't they!

"I should run now, too."

I stuffed the heirlooms in my pockets. The documents in this room haven't gotten their ink dry, so I'll just leave it here... Since I was the one who took care of them all in the first place, no one should get too suspicious. Mm... maybe it is a bit suspicious?

Whatever. If I try to escape through the path the kids went through... the imperial army would of course be waiting, so I'll run off in a different path. I opened one of the drawers below the closet, and unlocked the secret mechanism.

Clack!

This is escape route 11, my ultimate escape path! I had thought putting an escape path in a closet was far too obvious, so I thought about putting it in a drawer below the closet. After pushing my body into the tiny hole forcefully, I lit the candles, closed the drawer, and locked the secret mechanism.

-Super complicated?

[Better than dying.]

After doing that, I walked through the dark cave...

[Whoa, creepy. Feels like a ghost would pop up.]

...Don't say something like tha...

“Oh good, you did actually come this way.”

...Oh deary me. Can I just get a ghost instead?

## Chapter 4. And So Their Story Begins. (5)

---

“Oh good, you did actually come this way.”

...Oh deary me. Can I just get a ghost instead?

“What’s this? You look like you saw a ghost.”

Hoho, If only I was actually looking at a ghost right now...

“Why are you here.”

I looked around, trying to check if there were any assassins nearby, but it wasn’t like I could find them in the first place. Most assassins used energy to hide their bodies, meaning that they would be invisible to me.

No, before that, the fact that this girl in front of me found this place is a huge problem.

“Oh my, isn’t it obvious that a former disciple would come to visit her teacher~?”

Her grinning face might look extremely charming, but right now it just looks like a face of a god damned succubus. Before that...

“How did you know about this place?”

This was a path that I created using the dwarven magic tools that I smuggled in here. Do you even realize how much money I spent on making this thing?! I had zero mana, so I had to use extra-expensive magic tools that didn't cost any mana at all!

And since I couldn't even activate the magic stones on those tools, I had to make the kids activate it as a "test" and use those stones for several days straight digging the path! It's a path that's filled with my blood and sweat! No one was supposed to know about this!

I guess she isn't running the information department for nothing?! Did she find out all the secret paths already?!

I thought various thoughts like these in panic, but the response I got was pretty dull.

"I found it while digging an escape path?"

"...what."

I spoke with a slightly surprised tone, but she didn't seem to have noticed. Well, to be more exact, she seemed to be recalling some past memories of hers, seeing how she was frowning quite harshly.

"Well... after the metal bat came out, I began digging an escape path with the other kids... and found this?"

...She was actually thinking of running.

“Why didn’t you run?”

“...Too many traps. And by the time we managed to get through all of them, you were done with us.”

“Is that it... then why are you here? Is it the organization?”

The kid shook my words away with her hands, and smiled.

“Teacher, do you... no, did we even have loyalty for this organization in the first place? The empire gets destroyed once it loses power, and the kingdom gets disintegrated once it loses its meaning. And an evil organization can get destroyed at any time in history. That was what you said, remember?”

...I said that?

“Sure.”

My mouth says the opposite of my thoughts. The bat mumbled something in my head, but I just ignored it and kept talking.

“But the organization did not get destroyed ye...”

“It did, though?”

The girl cut me off before I even finished my sentence. I thought the Utopia project and the status of the Organization would have bought some time, but I guess not...

I only managed to understand how the organization fell so quick thanks to the girl's next words.

“One of the 3 fighter groups in the organization got beat up by you, and the financial manager took away all the money and ran. I took my people away using one of your secret paths as well. And it turned out that the biggest fighting force in the organization was a part of the empire all along.”

“...Rian was?”

“I think he was a descendent of the Hascell family? He basically took over half of the Black Sword Corps, and he took away basically all the classified info in the organization as well.”

...Hoho, that damn trash was actually a noble. I thought he was a kid from the hood or something?! How the hell did that kid who swore faster than a street rapper manage to be some noble's kid?

No, before that, since Rian was friends with one of the head commanders in the Black Sword Corps, it makes sense that he took over about half of them, but...

“Even so, it's too fast.”

Even if the Black Sword Corps helped the imperial troops get in, there's still the elite forces of the boss that needed to be defeated. That should have bought quite a...

Well, that's what I thought, but.

"The Sword Saint killed all the elites."

...Wow, ok.

"Not only that, me and Geral brought our elite troops and killed them as well."

Mm, so... in conclusion...

"Because of that, the rest of the members of the Organization who are still alive are just dying to kill you~"

...What the hell?! Why?!

"Why?"

"Isn't it obvious? Me and Geral betrayed, our seniors were all spies, our juniors ran away already, and the kids you're taking care of are kind of like spies as well. In other words, you're basically at the center of everything."



“So in other words, I became the person who destroyed this organization?”

“Well, more like, they think you came here specifically to destroy them?”

“What about the empire?”

“Mm... they want you pretty badly as well. Just when did you manage to get acquainted with the princess... Ah, she was the person who hired me in the first place. She said she'd make us government officials as long as you were captured.”

-Wao... this princess is a total yandere.

Yeah... then...

“So you came here to capture me, then?”

Cia smiled when I asked this.

“No, I came here to elope!”

-...She seems to be a lot worse.

Yeah...

# Chapter 4. And So Their Story Begins. (6)

---

## 4.5 Their Story

[2] Atia Nel Karuan: You can't run.

“Not yet?”

I frowned a little after receiving the report.

I attacked the organization from the inside, and killed off most of their heads as well.

But we still aren't done yet?

“T, there are commoners living on the outskirts like a wall. They're strangely attached to the organization...”

“Commoners? Supporting the organization?”

When I made a confused face, someone next to the reporting soldier explained to me what this was about.

“The Utopia Project. It's the instructor's project. If we were to describe it nicely, it's a project to create heaven on earth, and if we were to describe it badly, it's human farming.”

“Tell me the specifics.”

“It isn’t actually much. The organization buys slaves and oppressed peasants, then gives them what they want. Doing this generates a satisfactory amount of happiness. By being treated as a proper human, these people stopped thinking of the organization as villains. Rewarding these humans based on merit gave them happiness, and thanks to that, heroes that appeared because of a death in the family stopped appearing. It’s like killing two birds with one stone.”

“In short, it’s a human wall?”

“Right.”

Tok tok tok

I fell into deep thought as I tapped the table with my finger. A human wall. As an empire that emphasizes its citizens more than anything, it is nearly impossible to remove these peasants to attack.

“In any case... who?”

Whilst thinking, I suddenly realized that this man who told me this was someone that I hadn't seen before.

“Ah, I was the person who was in charge of the finances in the organization. My name's Geral Hyde.”

“Ah, that traitor?”

“Haha, you mean ‘patriot’? I ran off with all their cash and information. They can't even revive anymore.”

I sighed quietly as I looked at the grinning man. The reason why evil organizations revived so much was because the heads of the organization was able to use their money and information to create a new one every time it fell.

But Howling was gone for sure. There was no way they could revive in the near future. Why? That man over there stole everything. He ran off with enough money to run the empire for a

single month. That much money is enough to run a small kingdom for about a year. It's an enormous sum of money.

“Well, fine, ‘patriot’. How well do you work?”

“Pretty well. Even the instructor praised me for my financial skills.”

“Good enough.”

It's good enough if that person took notice of the man's skills. After all, that person had enough skill with money and office work that I almost began a war with the imperial treasurer just to get that person for myself.

I suppose I'll just use this guy here for finances, then... and gift the annoying treasurer that person when we capture him.

“Well, that's that. In any case, where is he? Your teacher, I mean.”

“Probably in one of his secret tunnels. We know there's 9, but there's probably more.”

“...So he can... run?”

“If it's him, there's a chance.”

If it's that man... yes. It's possible. Right. But.

“You think I'd let you run?”

Some people flinched at my words, but that didn't matter. What mattered was bringing that person in front of me. Once that happens, I'd allow him to be near the beautiful and lovely me, and work in the palace with a very high wage and with great power as well.

In any case.

“Where's the other one?”

There were two traitors in the organization. One was the finance manager, and the other was...

“The head of the information department, was it? She was the one who contacted me first...”

“Ah... S, she said she was going to get the instructor...”

“She was a girl, right?”

Something felt wrong.

“...Yup.”

“...What are the chances of her running away with him?”

Geral looked away after hearing the question. But after a short while of glaring at the man, he gave in, and answered with a nervous laugh.

“Ha.. haha... w, well... about 92%?”

“...Her subordinates are all here though?”

“We were trained to trust only ourselves. Didn’t you see how we betrayed the Organization in an instant?”

“Yeah? Then...”

Well, I don’t really care about this situation, actually. When this happens...

“Bring him here. If you don’t, you’re all dead?”

Daddy said threatening people with power always worked.

Extra:

Emperor: Hoho, my dear daughter. Do you know what a member of the imperial family needs to do?

Princess: Take care of the citizens?

Emperor: Hoho, that is not the case at all. We just need to be good at two things. Threatening people, and rewarding people.

Princess: Why?

Emperor: People work well when you threaten them. Obviously you have to make them stake their lives. And when they complete their job, you can just give them some pocket money as a reward.

Princess: !!



## Chapter 4. And So Their Story Begins. (7)

---

“Who’s eloping with who here?”

“You and I, of course.”

“...I don’t love you though?”

“The love I possess for you is enough for two people, so it’s fine!”

...Words like these kept flying back and forth between us. What the hell’s up with that logic of “enough love for two people” anyway?

-This girl’s pretty scary. Seems like the type to stab you after seeing you with a different girl.

[Stop. That actually seems way too likely.]

When the girl approached me with widened eyes, I moved back and lifted the metal bat in defense.

“If you keep coming this way... I’ll hit you.”

“Urk!”

Cia jumped back several meters right when the silver club

entered her vision.

“Why is that accused object here...”

“...Rudh was already beat by this thing.”

“...Is he dead?”

“I decided to have mercy as his former teacher, and decided to just beat him up.”

“...You should’ve taken mercy by ending him cleanly.”

The girl said this even as her eyes focused onto the bat.

“Just leave that useless thing, and come with me!”

-U, useless?! You called me, the greatest weapon in the world known as Arcadia, useless?! Me, who’s extremely cute and beautiful? Me, who can use all kinds of magic, transform to all kinds of different forms, and become a human as well? Me, who can absorb and use magic by myself? Me, who’s a, a..!

[Pervert.]

-Right! Pervert!...Wait, no! What are you making me say?! Is this betrayal? Are you betraying me? Why?! ...I, it actually feels good?!

[.....]

For a moment right there, I actually thought about throwing this thing away, but the materials that went into making it were too precious... And the cost of it is enough to buy an entire fief...

“I refuse.”

Cia’s face hardened a little when I said this.

-Master... I’m touched!

It’s not because of you... I just feel that going with Cia would make my life really annoying.

“Then... I’ll have to take extreme measures.”

Snap!

With a snap of her finger, multiple shiny objects appeared from behind her. Rather than magic, this is...

“Arrows?”

“Arrows and other weapons, to be more specific. We won’t hit you directly, of course. Just a scratch should be enough to paralyze

you completely.”

-...I was right! As I thought, I was right! I knew it! This girl is scary!

I already knew that she was quite scary... But seeing her in action is really frightening.

“You... can’t use magic, because you were cursed by god.”

“I don’t really recall a moment when I actually got cursed?”

I’m serious. Even though I look like this, I was able to remember everything from my birth. If I really did get cursed, that means that I would have been cursed when I was a fetus... wouldn’t that be too much?

“Well, who cares. Anyway, teacher, you are a swordsman. A one that learned the sword, and only the sword. As long as you have the chance, you can kill any knight before they even use their life sword. But even you have a weakness. And that would be... long distance attacks.”

“...Correct.”

Cia’s right. In the case of melee combat, I can just kill my opponents before they use their energy. Energy is like the life energy of this world, and it takes a bit of time before actually using it. Of course, it would be different for those who are at the

extremities of power, but it's generally difficult to meet people like that in the first place.

But what if attacks were coming from a distance? Is there a way to block that? I can block some arrows with my weapon, but even that has a limit. And if it can paralyze me with just a scratch, there really is no way to block it. At least, I can't.

“...Can I just surrender?”

“Surrender and run, is it?”

Cia grinned, and lifted her hand. At the same time, sounds of crossbows being loaded could be heard.

“Just sleep a bit. You'll be in our new home when you wake up.”

[I don't have a house though?]

-Ha, can't even afford a house at that age?

[...Do you even know how expensive you are?]

-Kya! You spent all your money just for my body... I, I'm touched...

...Something just felt super wrong there, but let's just ignore

that...

“...Are you actually thinking of trying to deflect all these arrows?”

Cia asked me this when I lifted the metal bat. What, you think I'm crazy? How the hell would I do that?

“...I guess you can try.”

Snap!

The arrows began to fly when her fingers snapped. It looks like these arrows are mostly coming for my limbs...

[Let's go.]

-I'm ready!

I swung the bat before the arrows got here. When I did so, a silver wave appeared on the area the bat passed through.

“W, what?!”

An afterimage? That's not it. The bat's actually beginning to melt down like a liquid. And that liquid soon turned to form a wall right as the arrows were about to strike!

-H, hurts! Something's beating me...

...Everything's all good except those moans from the bat over there... in any case, I began to move forward once I confirmed that all the arrows had been blocked.

The metal bat is no normal weapon. It is most definitely not for training purposes. The wooden bat was enough for that. The real purpose of the metal bat was to serve as my ultimate weapon at a time of crisis.

I cannot guarantee that this weapon is stronger than any other, but I can guarantee that it can protect you better than anything else in the world.

With each step I took, the silver liquid wrapped around my body more and more, and hardened.

-Hahn~ me and the master... are becoming one...

...Should I just take it off?

The arrows scare me quite a bit, so I suppose that's a no for now.

“W, what's that?”

Cia's looking surprised... how rare.

“It’s an improved form of a homunculus’ memory form. With this, I am able to withstand attacks from even siege weapons.”

Fire and lightning magic wouldn’t work either. But things like earth magic and explosion magic can give me internal damage.

“...Shoot!”

Cia blinked a few times, then issued a command while biting her lips.

-Run, oppa!

[I’m no oppa, but... let’s go!]

I put pressure into my feet. At the same time, the armor-form bat began shining with a silver light.

-Faster than any other! Different from any other! Haste!

[...They say magic chants are based off of what you find to be the easiest, but... that chant seems to be some kind of a trap?]

-Who cares! Run, oppa!

Crack!



“Huaaaaa!”

I ran as the magic activated. I passed by Cia, and as I did so, I gave the girl a light bonk on her head. Of course, this attack was reinforced with the power of the bat.

[We'll just charge through.]

-Let's do this like a man!

Some magic spells came my way, but I was able to block most of it with the armor, and those that couldn't be blocked were blocked with the magic cast by the bat.

The greatest advantage of ego weapons was that they could do things by themselves. Since I was unable to even activate magic tools, I needed to get special tools developed to activate tools. But with the appearance of the ego weapon, the need for that was gone. The dwarves seemed to have taken those activation tools and began to create stuff like refrigerators and other weird stuff out of them with the logo [Activate anything with just a click of a button!].

Of course, because the magic stones required to keep those tools running are so expensive, only the rich seemed to be using it. Ah, actually, I think I heard something about wizards being able to recharge magic stones, thereby becoming able to use those tools for basically free of charge.

After running full force, I eventually managed to see the door to the outside world. Of course, I gave the two guards guarding the doors a big whack with my fist.

Once I entered the emergency shelter at the end of the path, the armor turned back into a bat.

-Tired...

The thing really did sound pretty tired. Even though it can gather its own mana, it does have an upper limit. No, the only reason it could even store mana in the first place was because I mixed in a bunch of expensive metals to make it.

In other words, this thing is the ultimate result of throwing in a huge amount of cash. I never tested its limit, but it seems like this is it.

-If she follows us again, you're dead.

It sounded really worried. Even though it looks like this, it teleported, turned into drumsticks, and turned into armor as well. It can transform into just about anything, but doing that costs a lot of mana.

[You worked hard.]

-W, why are you being so nice all of the sudden?

[Because you deserve it.]

-Hnn, don't throw me into a dusty closet again, then, ok?

[That place is gone now, anyway.]

-Oh yeah.

I made small talk with the bat as I walked to the place where I was supposed to meet Rein...

“Oh good, you did actually come this way.”

Crack!

“Kyeeeaahuaheaahaeaaa”

“Oops...”

I heard the same thing that Cia said a moment before, so I swung my bat out of instinct. But the one who was rolling on the ground turned out to be...

“So it was you, Rein.”

Sorry.

## Chapter 4. And So Their Story Begins. (8)

---

“...So this is the power of the legendary metal bat.”

Rein said this as he trembled on the ground.

“Sorry. Cia came to me saying the same thing in the escape path.”

“...What’d she want?”

“She wanted to elope.”

“...You were lucky to come back alive.”

Looks like he knows something. Hoho, Cia, you scary girl.

-She was a total yandere...

[I guess so.]

She probably recovered by now, so let’s finish this quick.

“I collected all the heirlooms. The one with the flower’s probably the one from the Nermia family.”

“Probably... aren’t you being too irresponsible?”

“I wasn’t the one who stole it, so I wouldn’t know.”

...There isn’t proof, right? There’s no material proof at the scene, so it’s all good.

“...Is that it?”

Let’s just erase his suspicious gaze by showing him the metal bat again...

“Go.”

“...What about you?”

“You don’t have to worry about me.”

“No, I’m worried about myself...”

“You don’t have to worry. The one who’s behind all this is the princess.”

“...That worries me even more.”

This was the kid who was trying to become the best host in the capital. He probably heard a few rumors about the princess already. That’s probably why he’s scared, but.

“I worked with the princess in the past.”

“...You seem to have done a lot of strange things.”

“It was because of the rumors that the metal Mistein was there. I was there for about 2 years? I think that’s why the generation before Cia became so rebellious.”

“...The legendary generation. They took half of the organization with them and made a new organization of their own, didn’t they?”

“...The organization needed the metal to make the device that restricts energy, so I was needed outside despite having to leave my disciples. But in the end, we failed to secure the metal.”

No need to tell him about how I smuggled it away.

“...So the point is, the princess isn’t really like the rumors say?”

“Well, the rumors are actually pretty downsized.”

“...That’s even worse!”

I sighed as I looked at Rein scream in pain.

“She doesn’t care about where you’re from, as long as you have talent. She is confident that she would be able to reform anyone. And in reality, she actually can do that.”

“...So it’s fine as long as she thinks I’m useful?”

“Yes.”

Rein began to think after hearing this. Because of the princess’ face, it went without saying that the males treated her nicely. On the other hand, she got a lot of hate and jealousy from the females, even though it wasn’t really shown outright.

But she knows that already. But what if Rein was there?

Even though he looks like this, he could potentially rank himself at first place in the capital’s host club. No, he is probably better than that. And the host club is a place where the nobles go to in the first place.

Rein, who can seduce all kinds of noble women into his stead, could probably look favorable towards the princess.

“Then what is she like?”

“What, you planning on seducing her?”

“...Not planning on dying any soon. No, in the first place, being



in love with someone in this job would get you killed in an instant.”

Yeah, it wouldn't be strange if he actually died.

“...Well, she's... like Cia.”

Grab.

The moment the words left my mouth, Rein grabbed on my leg.

“T, take me! I don't want to die!”

“...Just what does Cia look like to you...”

“A yandere! A total yandere! I could see the madness in her! So what if she's pretty, what if she's talented? No, her beauty and talent is what actually scares me the most!”

“.....”

His accurate observations rendered me speechless. But...

“Then there is no one who would deliver this for me.”

“...Y, you're trying to kill off your disciple because of a simple delivery?!”

I sighed when I looked at Rein clinging onto me with tears in his eyes. Then, I spoke a few words to him.

“Will you just leave, or will you get beat and leave?”

Of course, I said this as I raised the metal bat in my hand.

“I, instructor... Don’t... I’m gonna die...”

“I’m telling you, she’s not gonna kill you.”

“But she’s like Cia!”

“If you don’t run fast, that Cia’s going to come here.”

“Uhh....”

I poked the now-delirious disciple with the metal bat, and spoke.

“Stupid child... Where do you think you’re taking this package to?”

“That kid, obviousl...”

“Where is that kid from?”

“The Nerm...ia...”

“Yeah. The Nermia family. It’s a family that even the emperor can’t touch easily.”

Well, it’s supposed to be like that, anyway. From what I’ve heard, the emperor seems like a person who’s willing to screw anyone if he feels like it. But then again, he’s not stupid, so I don’t think he’d actually do that.

“Also, since these are the heirlooms of multiple noble families, you should actually be rewarded for returning them. No, they may actually want to silence you. After all, some families still do not realize that their family heirlooms are fake.”

That “silencing” part may be an assassination, but that’s unlikely as he would bring in quite a lot of heirlooms with him. No, before that, no one would touch him, as he would become quite close to the princess and the Nermia family.

“You’ll be safe just by bringing this with you.”

“Then... Can’t you come with me?”

“...I’ll give you this, so just go.”

The man’s face began to turn greedy when I handed him the final

gift.

“Y... you’re giving this to me?”

“As long as you have this, you won’t die. But again, the princess doesn’t kill anyone who is useful to her.”

“.....”

He began to think as he stared at the object that I gave him.

“...I’ll do it.”

“...Good choice.”

The guy did do a lot of work, to be honest. He worked hard so far.

“Take this.”

“Thank you!”

Perhaps this was what the scene from old martial arts novels were like. The scene of a Pope from the Demon Church handing down orders to his faithful subordinate... Rein held out his hands whilst kneeling in front of me.

Well... things would get troublesome if this thing gets out into

the world, but who cares? It's not like people would use this thing, anyway. Maybe it'd get used in a torture chamber at the worst?

I handed the wooden bat to Rein, and put my hand on his shoulder.

“Work hard.”

“Thank you!”

I briefly looked at him shout, and began thinking about my hideouts.

-You aren't gonna use that from now?

[It looks strange, which might draw too much attention.]

-What about me tho?

[You can shapeshift, so it's fine.]

-Hng... it's tiresome though...

[I won't ask you to turn into something difficult. Mm... a bracelet is enough?]

-Turning to something smaller than this is hard... Becoming two

bracelets for each arm is harder too...

[I'll... let you move freely.]

-For real? Holy shit! What the heck?!

I smiled, and answered its question.

[I need that ability of yours at the place where I will run to.]

-Where are you going to run to?

I took a look at the burning Organization. If I go a little further over that place, I should be able to run to a different country. Normally, I'd run there, but...

[We're going to the capital.]

-...Where exactly?

[Yugrasia.]

One of the four great schools in the Empire.

# Chapter 4. And So Their Story Begins. (9)

---

## 4.5 Their Story

[3] Harnel Rel Cia: If you think you can run, just try it.

“Ah...”

He left.

That was the only thing I could think of when I came back to my senses.

I had never thought of failing from the start. Teacher was the most talented and detailed person I knew about, but apart from that, he was weaker than the average person.

That was... what teacher was like.

Because he was better than no one, he had to be better than everyone,

And because he was better than no one, he had to think more than anyone.

Because of that, he always strove to make the best situation for himself at all times.

But I thought that as long as I could dig into his weaknesses, I would be able to render him powerless.

Because of that, I did not think that I would lose.

“...You’re always above me.”

Who would’ve thought? Who would’ve thought that the tool of pain would’ve transformed into an armor? Who would’ve thought that that armor would be able to use magic?

With that, I understood. Teacher was never thinking of the “best situation” for himself in the first place. No, he had been always thinking of the worst situation. He was always thinking of a battlefield where he could never win nor survive.

And he thought of methods to survive in such a place.

Did the teacher know that his escape path was discovered from the start? No, he probably expected something like this to happen.

Did the teacher never think about fighting long-ranged attackers? No. Since they were his greatest weakness, he probably thought about them the most.

That was who he was. He was someone who was always one step ahead, someone who always went for your weaknesses.



“...The damage?”

“...Those who were struck are still unable to move, and the rest are casualties from our own troops. Two are heavily injured, and twenty are paralyzed from our arrows... By the way, what in the world was that?”

“...The unknown.”

“What?”

“It is the unknown. It is something we cannot comprehend.”

“...The unknown, is it.”

“Yes.”

I could not understand it from the start. I could not take it from the start.

After all, teacher was the person who taught me, who thought I could take anything in this world, that something known as the unknown existed.

“Those who can move will take the injured with them. Those who have fainted... Just beat them till they wake up. They won't die from just a single hit from that thing.”

“...I think death would be a better option.”

“I got beat for an hour because of that thing.”

“...He beat an unconscious woman...?”

“Nope. When you get hit by that thing, you come back to life. Fainting? That would be a heavenly blessing. Honestly, that thing isn't too painful. Just a little bit more painful than the wooden bat?”

Everyone looked at me with a sick face, but they didn't know. After all, I didn't know before I experienced it myself.

“What's the wooden bat...?”

“...The unknown.”

“That's the unknown as well...?”

This particular subordinate usually had a very straight face, but he was showing me a variety of expressions today. Was this the power of the teacher as well?

“Anyway... we're going back.”

“Back... where?”

“The Imperial Palace.”

His eyes widened once I said this. Hah, he really is showing me all kinds of faces today...

“I thought the princess betrayed us?”

“The princess? You think we have the time for her?”

“...You mean...”

“Right. Since the matters at Howling are all sorted out, we’re going back.”

“...Does the emperor know?”

“Nope. But I have enough power in my hands to do something like this.”

There is something that even the teacher doesn’t know about.

The reason why the Organization fell so fast. Teacher’s calculations were perfect. If he knew about all the variables involved, everything would have gone as he had expected.

“There’s a lot of things we need to clean up.”

“...Right.”

The one thing that the teacher didn’t know about was the fact that the Empire was the one that supported the Organization. This was something that not even the boss of the organization knew about. The Empire thought that it would be good to have an evil force they could control, especially when they knew that there would always have to be evil in the face of good. In essence, this Organization was only there to help the Empire detect and destroy corrupt nobles and officials.

Well... all that only half-succeeded because of the teacher’s Utopia project.

“...Things will get busy again.”

“Because we need to start from scratch?”

“If the Empire’s going to create a new evil organization, it’d be better to be under the emperor.”

“But he was talking about killing teacher? Do you even know how fragile teacher is?”

“...The definition of ‘fragility’ in my head must be slightly skewed.”

When I glared at him, he shut up. Wasn't he usually the silent type? When'd he get so loud... ah.

“By the way, I'm going to go on a vacation?”

“...There's a lot of work.”

“Work hard.”

“...Miss!”

“Shut up. I'm going on a vacation. Haven't gone on any in a long, long time.”

“We don't get vacations...”

“The laws regarding the people who work for the Empire are really nice, ha.”

“We don't get included in those laws... No, in the first place, we're in a secret organization.”

“...Go on a strike or something, then.”

I made a small pout, and walked out while blocking my ears. I think someone's shouting behind me, but... I can't hear~

But in any case...

“If you think you can run away, just try it.”

Try it if you can.

# **Chapter 5 - Welcome To The Summoner's School**

# Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (1)

---

There is only a single empire in this world: the Karuan empire.

There were no alliances, nor were there nations, that could go up against the Empire. It truly was the strongest power in the world. And in the heart of this Empire, there were four schools gathered within.

First, there was Arucia, the school of swords.

It could be said to be the place that produced about half of the empire's knights. It gathers countless talented young men and women from prestigious families, and trains them to become powerful knights. It wouldn't be a stretch to say that most of the knights in the Royal Guard are from this school.

Second, Marcis, the school of magic.

It is the school that has the most amount of outsiders. It is managed by members that were sent from different magic towers spread out in the empire. Many of its most talented students were often taken away by the magic towers as a result, which caused a fierce competition between the imperial palace and the towers to appear. Although it's called a school, it resembles a tower more, and it is a place where political battles are most often seen.

Third, Mercaria, the normal school.



It is a school that many of the peasants try to enter. It is a school that trains future government workers, and because of that, they always take the last place in most school competitions! As the students here are all average, they simply can't win in athletic or cultural competitions that take place between schools.

The school has often been looked down upon because of this in the past, but having produced important government officials in the recent years raised their status up to the levels nearing the aforementioned schools above.

Lastly, Yugrasia, the school of summoning.

It is a school that focuses on training summoners, and... it is one of the stranger schools in the Empire. A lot of people think that summoners are made for fighting, but that isn't the case. Each and every one of summoned beasts have a different specialty, and it wouldn't be a stretch to say that these areas of specialty can vary extremely greatly.

Of course, the one who gets favored the most in the end is a summoner specialized for battle.

Special summoners who possess god-ranked beasts are beings that can turn the tide of the battlefield in an instant, and they can get multiple times stronger depending on what battlefield they are in. But these kinds of summoners only appear once in a decade or so... and since some of them have similarities to wizards, and some of them have similarities to knights, they are kind of like jacks of

all trades.

Why am I talking about this, you ask?

“You’re about to close down the school?”

They’re about to close the school the moment I arrive, hoho.

“Apologies, professor Nicerwin. You came all the way here after hearing our request, and yet you got greeted with a news like this...”

Nicerwin Ein.

He’s an honorary professor who’s well-respected in the circle of summoners. He’s also one of the fake identities I’ve created in the past. But don’t get me wrong. While the person himself may be fake, it doesn’t mean that the rank of the honorary professor is. I managed to attain that position purely through my work.

Funnily enough, the summoned beasts of this world were all based upon the creatures and gods that appear in old mythologies in earth. I used that fact to my advantage, and wrote myself a essay. That earned me a place as a professor. After all, knowing a bit more about the beast you encounter when summoning would help you form a contract with it easily.

I suppose this was one of the few advantages that I had left from the other world?

Well, that's that. But in any case.

“Why is that?”

“...What should I say... we aren't really showing good results compared to the other schools...?”

“Are you talking about the other 3 schools?”

“Yes. The students who are able to summon armour and weapons are being pressured by those in Arucia, and the students who have elementals get pushed down by the students at Marcia... No, in the first place, the descendents of noble families at both schools have summoned beasts already...”

After hearing out what the old man had to say, I organized everything into this:

Many knights and magicians from richer families have summoned beasts of their own. And even though the students in the school of Yugrasia work their asses off with their summoned beasts, but the guys at the other schools are knights/magicians from the start. Their stats outrank that of the people in Yugrasia from the very beginning. Of course, the students of Yugrasia might have a stronger connection to their summoned beasts, but their own firepower is severely lacking from. Because of that, they always take last place in annual competitions between schools. And since they always get terrible scores at national festivals and such, the students who attend the school has been slowly

decreasing? Students who have talent to become a summoner join Marcis or Arucia instead. That says quite a lot.

“Is it fine for people to summon beasts at different schools?”

“It’s a very dishonourable act, but... since a lot of people are contracted from the start, and since the four schools pride themselves in letting the people do what they want...”

“We can’t interfere?”

“...Right.”

“Just what is the summoner’s association saying about this?”

“The summoner’s association share close ties with the magic tower...”

“Hah, there’s just nothing we can do?”

“Yes...”

The geniuses are all going over to different schools, and our only support is not to be trusted.

-We’re screwed? What about my freedom, then?!

[...I never said we were.]

It just looks like we're screwed. Honestly, at this point, it would be better to bail to a different school. Hell, it's just right next door. But to be honest, it's best to join a school like this at a chaotic time!

"How long will this school stay up for?"

"About... about 3 years."

"The imperial festival... You're planning to keep the school going until the festival?"

"Yes. Even though we are about to close down, we still have our pride as one of the schools that took care of education from the early days of the empire."

"I see."

"I apologize once again."

"It's fine. It's not like the school's actually closing down yet."

After the assistant principal went away, I moved to my dorm and unloaded my luggage. Once I did so, the metal bat began to talk again.

-What do we do if this place closes? We'd either be merchants or just be retired. Then what happens to me?! What about my freedom?!

I've said this before, but the energy that the metal bat uses is something that gets gathered in small increments in time. But when it changes form, its efficiency drops significantly. And if it transforms into a human? No need in saying how little the energy intake is. If it isn't a safe place like a school, it's hard to guarantee this thing's freedom. After all, my freedom comes first.

[It hasn't closed down yet.]

-But it will soon!

[...It's not like we have no way to save it.]

-...For real? Seriously? How?

[That's...]

-That's?

[A secret.]

## Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (2)

---

“Even the professors seem to want to leave the school.”

These words were what began the meeting between the core faculty. A sigh simultaneously came out of everyone's mouths .

-What now?

What now? We're going to have to go all out, of course.

“They can leave if they want.”

Everyone made a shocked face when I said this. Are you guys surprised?

“Th, then... what about the students...”

“They can leave too.”

“We can't have that! Why would we cut off the number of students especially when they're leaving already?!”

When a professor said this in rage, everyone else in the room began to mutter in agreement with him. But who am I?! I am a proud man of Korea, the man from the nation of competitive

education!

“What matters is what the Empire thinks of us, not the number of students.”

“What does that mean?”

“Numbers don’t matter. Sometimes, small numbers bring positive light.”

“...Explain, please.”

Unlike others, the principal seemed to have realized what I was talking about. Well, he is the principal, after all.

“The Empire is the strongest nation in the world. We have several times the amount of nobles compared to other nations. But things are different when it comes to high class nobles. We have less dukes than other countries, and the number of marquesses in the nation equal that of neighboring nations.”

“What are you trying to say here?”

“Sometimes, having less makes you stand out more. Therefore, there is no need to stop professors who are trying to leave. We can just use this chance to keep the teachers who truly care about the school. We have plenty of people who are more talented than them. Redirecting the money spent on untalented teachers to the talented ones will be more profitable in the long term.”



“...That would create many problems in regards to educating...”

“That’s why we need to cut down the number of students. Looking at the students who joined the school last year, most of them were just here to transfer to different schools.”

“Right.”

“There’s no need to take them in. No, if we do, we will simply be used. Unlike other schools, we can only truly shine when we teach a select few. Right now, it’s simply more profitable to teach a small amount of students.”

“...What about cash, then? We can’t even run the school with the current tuition fee. But if we cut down the number of students...”

One of the professors asked this as I explained everything. Hoho, what a stupid fellow. If we don’t have enough cash, then we can just...

“Raise the tuition.”

“...What?”

I smiled as I stared at the dumbstruck professor.

“If we don’t have cash, we can simply raise the tuition. In return, we provide better education.”

“Are you serious? Do you seriously think that would work?”

“It works. Why do you think the tuition for Mercaria is the cheapest? Because peasants go there the most? Because it’s an institution specifically created for peasants? Why do you think Marcis has the highest tuition? Because the ingredients required for experiments are expensive? No. That is not it. It has to do with the number of students they teach. As Marcis is an educational magic tower, it works with the professors choosing their students. Each professor works with around ten students. But Mercaria is different. Each professor teaches around fifty students. He would list out information on a blackboard, and expect students to understand everything. Because of this, only the real geniuses will be able to become high ranking officials, while others would only handle menial tasks in the government.”

“How does that matter?”

“The quality of students. In Marcis, when students hit a wall, they can always consult their professors. But that’s not always possible in Mercaria. If a student in Mercaria fails to keep up, he/she will have to try their best to catch up. We as a school, therefore, can work to instruct a small group of students as elites. We must stick multiple professors to a single student if we have to. We will make elites.”

“Is that possible?”

“It is. The majority of students who come to Marcis and Yugrasia

are from noble families. To them, tuition fees do not matter. What matters to them is good education.”

“...I suppose you’re right.”

“We just need to satisfy the parents. And after that... is this.”

-Holy crap... don’t you have a lot of cash on yourself already? Are you addicted to earning cash...? I thought we came here to hide?

The bat seemed to be extremely surprised at the paper that I took out. The other professors seemed to be equally surprised when they read it.

“T, this is...”

“Well, it’s certainly revolutionary, but...”

“...Can this be done?”

There wasn’t much that I wrote on that piece of paper. There were only 3 major points on it...

1. After school study time! (extra tuition)
2. Night study time! (extra tuition)

### 3. Weekend study time! (extra tuition)

In other words, the life of a Korean high school student!

“...The students will not be able to take this.”

One of the professors said this to me with a dumb face.

“They can.”

They can take it. Korean high school seniors were beings that had a schedule that transcended that. This? This was something that even middle schoolers could take.

“...Why the hell would you force them to study 9 hours a day?!”

Why so surprised? Korean high school students are beings that are equivalent to Saiyans. They are a race of studying that normally study 14 hours a day.

“...Having them come to school in the weekends is...”

“They will be coming here to study. After all, the sole purpose of students is to study!”

“T, there’s no way the students would comply with this!”

“Doesn’t matter. It’s ok as long as the parents are fine with this.”

“...N, no!”

“...Please, think of our current situation before saying anything like that.”

“.....”

The angriest professor in the group shut up with that. Right. This place is about to close down. They were in no position to reject an idea because they didn’t like it. No, before that. It’s just 9 hours of studying. Coming out in the weekends might be a problem, but they live in a dorm anyway, right? They’re just coming to school at ten, then leaving at 7, right? That’s basically heaven!

“...I’ll be asking this for the last time. Do you truly think students can survive under such a condition?”

“Yes. In a certain country I know of, students come to school at 7 in the morning, and leave at 10 at night.”

“...T, that is?!”

“I, it has to be a lie!”

Everyone made shocked faces. Haha, surprised with just this?

“And after that... they’d go to private academies for extra study.”

“...A, at 10?!”

“Academies weren’t meant to replace school in the first place?!”

“W, when will they sleep?!”

“And... in the battle in that nation, known as senior year, students would get 4 hours of sleep a day in their bloody battle for knowledge.”

“...It has to be a lie! Only demons would force students to doing something like that! No! Not even demons would do stuff like that!”

“R, right! I cannot believe a lie like that!”

They truly are good professors. If only people like these were in Korea... well, they’d instantly be crushed by the educational pressure and be converted into generic Korean teachers. No, actually, I’d be turning this entire place into a second Korea! A land that is fanatical about education!

“...Perhaps it is better to change like professor Nicerwin had suggested.”

“...Students won’t be the only problems here. The faculty will become extremely busy as well. But... in order to save the school, ‘we’ need to sacrifice ourselves. I... no, ‘we’ need to stick together to save the school!”

I put an emphasis on the “we” part. Group mentality deteriorates fast, and contains many problems, but it’s easy to drag everyone into a certain path as long as you handle it right.

Since the principal and the vice principal already thinks of me highly, they supported my ideas, and others began to follow suit given some time.

-Dear god... what did the students even do to you..? This is too much!

[...My school life was worse than this.]

-L, liar! You never went to school! You’re a commoner!

[...You say that, but you know it is the truth. Our souls are connected, meaning that you can notice at least that much. Accept the truth.]

-N, no! There’s no way! There’s no way a school like that exists!

Perhaps the bat, too, reached its mental limit. It denied reality with a shout, but see, reality doesn’t change no matter how much you shout.

“Then... we will follow through with professor Nicerwin’s suggestions.”

Everyone nodded. Hoho, things will get simple from here.

[Now, only the most important part is left.]

-What’s that...

[Firing the faculty.]



## Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (3)

---

Useless teachers got fired, and useful teachers got scouted in. Because of this, everyone became busy, one way or the other.

-So why are you slacking around?

[I am not slacking. Those at the top simply tend to not do anything.]

I, along with the vice principal and the principal, began to take a look at a pile of documents laid out in front of us. What is this, you ask?! It is the crucial bit of information that would prepare us for the upcoming war!

A month before new students actually apply to the schools they want to go to, the students visit the four schools in the capital for a total of three days.

Since these are the schools the kids would be stuck with for four years straight, it is essential that they check it out first!

Well, a lot of them probably made their choice about what school they'd like to go to, but there are cases where a fraction of these people change their minds after the three day event. That's going to be essential for us.

“We’ll have to be careful of Marcis.”

I feel like I said this before, but magic and summoning is similar. No, if you were to look at it from a slightly different angle, you might as well say that summoning branched off of magic.

Because of this, Marcis was this school’s primary enemy!

“It’s good that Marcis is taking in an unusually small amount of students this year.”

“Right... a student blew up half the dorms last year, and it looks like the school is still repairing the buildings.”

Good talents aren’t always good. If problem kids have talent, they cause all kinds of trouble, and sometimes the school becomes unable to take care of these problems.

“Doesn’t matter. Now, how many students will we take in for this year?”

“Normally, we take in 400, so...”

The two people in front of me stared at me with expectant eyes. Normally, Yugrasia took in about 350 to 400 students, but they took in 320 last year. Since they said there was a lot of space...

“100. That should be good enough.”

“...Shouldn’t we take in about 200?”

“No, 100 is enough. Are the professors ready?”

“We’ve recruited the 2 of best of our graduates, Muam and Arhan, in our ranks. Not only are they the best summoners the school produced in recent years, they are also very well known in the summoner’s world as well.”

“Graduates... We’ll have to get about three more of them before the school starts. Ah, you said these people were knights?”

“Yes. They’re both elders in the summoner’s association. They might be knights in name, but they’re actually closer to being soldiers.”

“That’s good. Then, could you please ask the two if they could recruit some of their friends to join this school?”

“Understood.”

Like this, I slowly made everything work the way I wanted it to, and thus my plan came to fruition. And, at the very next day, at 11AM...

“That’s quite a lot of people.”

Inside the supersized auditorium that the four schools often used to host competitions were thousands of people trying.

“These schools can be said to be the future of the empire, so it’s obvious that lots of nobles would try to come in.”

“Hm... I didn’t think people like the imperial treasurer or the duke to be here, though.”

“Both of them graduated from Mercaria and Arucia with full marks. It’s already well-established that they come every year to scout new graduates.”

“...Do they take anyone from our school?”

“...No...”

-Pls, have some mercy. You’re making the principal cry.

Yeah, I know. As a man who used to be someone who ran one of the best schools in the continent, seeing his school crumble down to nothing must be quite sad.

“Things will change from now on.”

“...Professor...”

It's been said that that summoners are usually quite emotional... the principal didn't really seem to be the exception to that rule, it seems.

The treasurer, the duke, and several other nobles started by giving speeches regarding the future of the empire, and the importance of students. Then, the principals from different schools came up to appeal to all the different students in the auditorium, and talked about all the people they produced over the years.

-Everyone seems quite excited about this.

[Just the parents. The kids are probably bored to death.]

The principal of Mercaria, who used the imperial treasurer as a representative to talk passionately about the school, and the principal of Arucia, who praised the duke endlessly about his sword skills to the point of making the man embarrassed, weren't too bad. Hoho, Marcis, however? They brought over the master of the Magic Tower, and talked about how magic was great, and how much money they had... it was embarrassing. If I were to give an example of how bad it got...

"We, the school of Marcis, are being funded by the Magic Towers, and all the ingredients we use in our experiments can be acquired at less than the market price. Also, the teachers will be hand-picked by all the different masters of Magic Towers in the Empire, and they will do their best in order to pass on all their knowledge to their students! Magic is a great scholarly subject that leads to great things. And precisely because of that, we need great

students filled with passion and motivation!”

You might be wondering why a speech like that might be boring, but... consider the following. The other schools all basically said what that man said before him. Mercaria talked about cheaper textbooks, and something about intelligence being something that cannot ever be surpassed... Arucia pretty much said the same thing as well.

-Boring...

[I'm falling asleep...]

They should've just picked out a single principal to talk instead or something. So repetitive... The students are probably dying of boredom right now. Of course, the parents are all carefully inspecting all the different schools.

“And now, Principal Keitaman will be giving a speech representing the Summoner's School of Yugrasia.”

“We, the school of Yugrasia, are being funded by the entire summoner's association, and all the tools we use in our studies can be acquired at less than the market price. Also, the countless graduates of the past will come to teach, and these teachers will do their best in order to inherit all their knowledge to the students! Summoning is a great scholarly subject that leads to great things. And precisely because of that, we need great students filled with passion and motivation!”

-...The principal betrayed us! I thought he would be special! I thought he might be different!

[We seriously should just hire one guy to say everything for all the schools.]

And when the vice principal basically said the exact same thing as the principal, I began to suspect that all the speeches here today was written by a single person. No, that can't be the case, right? If a single person wrote that, he wouldn't have the gall to just copy his speech over and over again...

“Next, professor Nicerwin from Yugrasia will be presenting a short speech for the students.”

Whatever, it's time to go. I put my paper in the back pocket, and stood up. I already memorized everything. Just glancing at your paper for a moment might cast doubt in the hearts of parents, so it's important that I speak with confidence. Sometimes, that can be the deciding factor when it comes to persuading others.

“I do not think that there are a lot of people trying to get into Yugrasia at the moment.”

The entire audience began to mumble when I said this. But then again, changing an adversity to an opportunity can only begin when one recognizes his problems.

“Last year, we weren't even able to fill the quota for the amount

of new students. Every wealthy household in this nation already knows a thing or two about summoning. If that were the case, it would be better for them to just go to Marcis to study summoning along with magic.”

It’s not just better. It’s fantastic. And because of that, Yugrasia’s about to collapse.

“That’s why we changed. We kicked out all the unmotivated teachers, and hired different experts both skilled and experienced. The students will change, too. Instead of taking in hundreds of students just for money, we’ll just recruit a hundred students who are truly talented.”

The audience began to mumble once more. “A hundred?” “How will the school run?” Stuff like that came out of a few people’s mouths.

“I promise you this. Our school will require the most amount of studying, and the highest tuition. Students will study from ten in the morning, all the way to seven in the evening. If need be, the professors will stay awake till dawn instructing all the students. At any time in the day, or night, the professors will be there to help the children.”

The eyes of the students seemed to rot away, and their expressions clearly seemed to say “I don’t want to go there.” But the parents are different! Their eyes are shining in delight! The ones who would send the kids to school are the parents anyway! The kids’ opinions are worth less than shit. Rather than appealing to the students, it is important to appeal to the parents instead!



“Classes will change as well. Normally, we would have one professor in charge of an entire class. But this year, we will have four professors working in one classroom. While a single professor lectures the class, the other three professors will be next to the students, always trying to assist them in any way.”

By doing this, it is possible to stop the students from doing anything else other than studying. Even the best teachers have a blind spot. I, the student who always sat at the back corner playing mobile games, can proudly tell you that it is simply not possible for a single person to monitor an entire class. But! With this, slacking becomes impossible! There can be no blind spots when there are four professors in the room! That isn't all, of course. Some students feel that they would interrupt a flow of the class when they try to ask a question, so they choose not to do it. Having teachers to help you at any time will make it easier for students to ask questions.

“So please, do consider coming to the new Yugras...”

“Wait! Aren't you Nicerwin Ein, the man who is known to have the most amount of knowledge regarding summoned beasts?!”

I smiled a dirty-ass smile inside when one of the parents shouted that out.

“Yes, I am.”

“So the information that you have regarding summoned beasts

are in the school as well? I heard that you know all about them! Is it actually true that you have information regarding S-ranked beasts?! Also, does the summoner's book that you claimed to have made... actually exist?!"

The best way to form a contract with a summoned beast is to know about the thing. The location, environment, and the objects around it all matter.

And strangely enough, most of the summoned beasts in this world are beings that appear in myths from my original world. Because of that, I know the general details regarding each and every one of them.

"You want the summoner's book? You can have it! Search for it! I left everything this world has to offer in that book!"

The audience burst into an uproar as soon as I said that. The summoner's book. It is said to be a book that is filled with my theories and my knowledge, a book that is unlike any other!

-I don't recall you ever making that though?

[I should probably do it now.]

I'd probably be arrested if I didn't make one.

Afterword:

# The Scammer King Na D. Ruan

# Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (4)

---

## 5.25 Their Story

[1] Ria El Nermia

“We, the school of Arucia, are being funded by countless noble families in the country, and all the weapons we use in training can be acquired at less than the market price. Also, the countless knights in the empire will come to teach the students, and they will do their best in order to inherit all their knowledge to the students! Sword arts is a great subject that leads to great things. And precisely because of that, we need great students filled with passion and motivation!”

A bulky professor passionately shouted these words in the middle of the stage. The professors all sounded pretty appealing at the start, but after finding out that all the speakers basically said the same thing, things quickly got boring.

I wanted to sneak off into some other place to read, but since my uncle seemed to be extremely interested in everyone's speeches, I couldn't bring myself to do so.

-...Is this supposed to be mental torture? I've seen some nasty demons in hell who drive their victims insane by repeating the same thing over and over again. Is this the same thing?

[Shut up.]

At this moment, the only reason why I'm awake is because of Suttr, the demon who formed a contract with me. This is the giant who destroyed an entire mythology, and the being that truly suits the title of the demon king... the being that the instruc... no, the being that the teacher turned into my slave.

I used to think of demons as something great, powerful, and scary, but thanks to Suttr, I began to perceive them to be more like gossipers.

-It'd be better if the audience was in an uproar or something. It being so quiet here just makes it too easy to hear the man speak.

[Right.]

After the professors from Arucia finished, the professors from Marcia came up to talk.

“We, the school of Marcis, are being funded by the Magic Towers, and all the ingredients we use in our experiments can be acquired at less than the market price. Also, the teachers will be hand-picked by all the different masters of Magic Towers in the Empire, and they will do their best in order to pass on all their knowledge to their students! Magic is a great scholarly subject that leads to great things. And precisely because of that, we need great students filled with passion and motivation!”

...They're literally just repeating the same thing over and over.

-...I thought this was a different school? Why are they talking about the same thing from before?

[...Maybe this really is supposed to be mental torture.]

The students here would probably go to the school their family went to for generations anyway, so there's really no point of them being here. But then again, while most of the people here already have good enough grades to study in what they want to study, they also have good enough grades to study something else in a different school.

But then again, that's only because they decided to give up on other subjects, and instead go all in for the subject they actually wanted to study.

The reason why they did that is because the entrance exams for the four schools work a little strangely. Instead of having a fixed grade, the tests for each of the subjects have an unlimited amount of points you can get. If you exceed the number of points required for one test, the rest of the points get distributed to a different test. So if you do exceedingly well on the magic test, but get a zero in the summoning test, you would still be able to go to Yugrasia.

Ah, of course, I got an extremely high score on everything. The old me would have struggled with summoning and sword arts quite a bit, but I've learned a lot in the last three years.

[I learned so much in that time...]

-...And I lost quite a bit during then.

Thanks to that... I really don't see any reason to go to a school. I mean, I do have to spend three years at the least in school, but... would it be worth it?

But when I came back, my parents sobbed profusely, and apologized for all they did over the years. They promised that they'd raise me like a normal kid, and sent me here...

Because of that, I swore that I'd at least try to lead a good life here. For my parents.

"Next, professor Nicerwin from Yugrasia will be presenting a short speech for the students."

Nicerwin Ein. That name immediately grabbed my attention.

He was a man who was revered in both the Tower of Sages and the Summoner's Association, and it was said that not many people had ever seen him before.

There were countless theories regarding who the man was. Some said he was born weak, and had a terminal illness, and was therefore being treated in a village of the elves, and others said that Nicerwin Ein was not a single man, but a team. Still others claimed that he was a prophet sent by the gods. The man was truly

someone shrouded in mysteries.

He was someone whose theories and intelligence attracted the attention of even the Magic Towers. But when I saw this man appear on stage, I became extremely shocked.

-T, that bastard! It's him!

“Teacher?!”

The shock I got from this caused enough noise to attract my uncle's gaze. But this all disappeared as soon as the professor said his next words.

“I do not think that there are a lot of people trying to get into Yugrasia at the moment.”

[...It's not him.]

-What the hell?! He looks exactly like the man!

Nope. Nicerwin looks similar to my teacher, but it wasn't him. There's no way teacher would smile like that. Come to think of it, the way Nicerwin acted was completely different from teacher.

[He just looks similar.]



-No... it's definitely him? They look exactly the same!

[They're completely different. Nicerwin talks and acts differently. He has a different voice as well. And why would he be coming to the capital, especially when he's being chased by the princess? Also, didn't you hear about how he escaped to a different country a while back?]

-...Even so, that face...

[Do you actually think teacher is capable of smiling? Like that?]

-...No...

When I reached a conclusion of my own, one of the parents in the audience stood up and shouted something.

“Wait! Aren't you Nicerwin Ein, the man who is known to have the most amount of knowledge regarding summoned beasts?!”

“Yes, I am.”

“So the information that you have regarding summoned beasts are in the school as well? I heard that you know all about them! Is it actually true that you have information regarding S-ranked beasts?! Also, does the book of all summoned beasts that you claimed to have made... actually exist?!”

-The summoner's book? What's that?

[It's a book that Nicerwin Ein wrote. It's said to contain all the information regarding every one of the summoned beasts that exist in the world. This bit of information came from the elves, so it's very unlikely to be false.]

What's important about contracting with summoned beasts is how much you know about them.

These summoned beasts can be anything from elementals, all the way to gods. If you want to form a contract with something like a god, you need to know what ticks these gods off, and what doesn't. In the end, knowledge is what matters the most when you try to get a good beast.

Just look at me. I managed to form a contract with a demon king, did I not? If the summoner's book truly exists, it'd give unlimited potential to any new summoners in the world. They'd be able to contract with those that are one, three... no, about five levels stronger than they are.

“You want the summoner's book? You can have it! Search for it! I left everything this world has to offer in that book!”

With that, everyone in the auditorium began to shout. Summoned beasts can be summoned as long as someone has even a little bit of magic.

In other words, just about anyone here should be able to at least attempt to contract a beast.

Seeing how even my uncle, who seemed determined to send me to Marcis, almost became tempted to send me to Yugrasia, I see no reason to explain just how great that book is.

Of course, I'd be going to Marcis in the end. A lot of my relatives work there, and my grandfather's people are there, too.

So there should be no way I'd meet that professor Nicerwin person.

...That's what I thought, but.

"You seem to be very talented in summoning."

"Ah, right..."

I met him just ten minutes after getting out.

## Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (5)

---

“You seem to be very talented in summoning.”

I saw someone familiar as I ran from annoying individuals, so I said that as a greeting.

“Ah, right...”

Jackpot! Right, there's no way I'd forget someone I was with for three straight years. See, unlike main characters, I don't actually have face blindness.

The joy I felt when I saw the surprised little kid was simply indescribable.

-Are you a lolicon? Do you want to get arrested?

[No, it's because her clothes are different.]

I suppose people were right when they say clothes are like wings. The girl looks like she'd grow up to be a fine lady in the future. The white dress she wore just gave off a more positive vibe as compared to the cheap black costume from the Organization.

-Is it fine to be like this? You'd be screwed if you got caught.

[In a situation like this, you have to be as bold as possible.]

I started acting like a wise scholar with a wide grin on my face. Plastic surgery does not exist in this world. Of course, there are illusion magics that change what you might look like, but those get discovered quickly.

But since I have an extremely common face that's pretty hard to recognize, it's fine for me to not disguise myself too much.

If I grow out my beard a bit, add some white hairs, add a bit of wrinkles, and change my angry face into a kind one, then oh my, it's Nicerwin Ein.

Since I didn't use magic, there's no proof that I'm fake. And with the help from the elves, I was able to create a perfect alibi, one of the most foolproof identities I had ever made. There may be some that may get suspicious of Nicerwin Ein, but there's no way anyone would connect him to Naruan.

In any case, the girl in front of me was someone who contracted Sutr! Even though the demon's power is restricted, she should still be qualified as an S-rank.

What does that mean? It means that she'd be the perfect poster girl! If we just put her face on the front gates, we'll have an influx of new students.

“Is she that good?”

The person who seems to be her father... mm... no, probably her relative, spoke to me in curiosity.

Is she talented? How the hell would I know? I’m just trying to get her because she contracted a demon. But of course I didn’t say anything like that.

“Very talented indeed... She probably can contract with a very strong beast.”

“Ah, she already contracted with a different beast.”

“Mmm... she did it too early.”

Yeah, I know. Who the hell do you think contracted her?

“...Yes... too early.”

“Early?”

“Yes. There’s no way I wouldn’t have noticed if she got a suitable beast for her. There’s two things that could’ve happened... she either formed a contract with a weak beast, or the beast she formed her contract with is too strong for her right now. It seems to be the latter, in my opinion.”

“H, how did you?!”

How did I know? Well, since the contract is kind of bullshit from the start, the demon's just not able to utilize all of its powers. There's two kinds of bullshit contracts when it comes to summoning, and one of them is when it's initiated by a summoned beast. In this case, the beast takes away the summoner's soul, and the beast becomes able to use all of its power. The other bullshit contract is initiated by the summoner. In this case, the summoner loses nearly nothing, but the beast is unable to use most of its powers. This is especially the case if the summoner is weak! Well, the kid is quite talented, so it should be fine, but there's no way she'd be able to control Sutr properly yet.

“Then... what should we do?”

“It'd be good if she came to Yugrasia. It'd be a waste to let her talent go.”

“But...”

“You're trying to send her to Marcis, yes?”

“You knew?”

Of course I knew. I almost died after stealing their heirloom.

“There's no way I wouldn't know of the white lily.”

“Ah, then you would know already. We’re...”

“No, that’s why you should take her to Yugrasia. I promise you this. Yugrasia will be the best school for summoners in the upcoming years. She should be able to graduate in three years with her skill. Learning magic later might be better for her.”

“Well...”

The man is trying to refuse, but it’s useless. His shaking eyes, and trembling hands show that he’s pretty close to being convinced already. Now, let’s go for my final attack.

“I believe this child is qualified enough to inherit all of my knowledge. I myself am not talented enough to get a strong beast, but... if it’s this girl, I think she can handle it.”

I put a strong emphasis on ‘inherit’. And at the same time.

[Now!]

-Yahoo! Seriously! Freedom! ...You’re not putting me back, are you?

The metal bat that was disguised as a bracelet began to shine, then melt down to form a different shape. After a moment, the bat turned into a little girl with long, shining silver hair that almost went down to her feet! And!



“Uun~ please listen to master?”

Kawaii overload! There's not many who'd refuse a request from little girls. And elementals are the purest of the pure! They're very hard to refuse! Of course, this particular girl isn't an elemental, but an evil fox, but others will think of her as an elemental. Not only that!

“Ohh... an elemental came out on her own?”

“As expected of Nicerwin...”

Rarely would a summoned beast come out without being summoned by the summoner himself. After all, doing that gives the beast many, many penalties.

But there are certain beasts that choose to come out on their own volition, and beasts doing that show that it shares a very strong bond with the summoner.

Of course, this thing is neither an elemental nor a summoned beast.

“Well?”

He's almost there. I just need his permission now!

“Mm... we’ll think about it.”

I thought he was almost there, but the girl intervened with a grin, and took away her uncle with a “Let’s go home, uncle.”

And then she went into Marcis... I’ll make you regret your actions.

# Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (6)

---

“There’s a lot.”

“Indeed, there’s a lot.”

“Too much, in fact.”

Over eight hundred applications were sent in.

Normally, Mercaria takes in two thousand, and Arcia takes in a thousand and two hundred. Seeing that Marcia and Yugrasia normally takes in around three hundred to four hundred students, this was a big change. It was also about eight times the amount of students I wanted to get.

...As expected, the pirate king was an amazing man! I just slightly changed the quote from the beginning of this one manga, and bam! People even started calling this the beginning of the [Great Summoner's Era]. Now, if someone comes in claiming that he'd become the summoner king, everything would be perfect!

...No...

This is all just extra work. Stop applying... They're literally just applying with shit grades...

I had heard that there were about four thousand and one hundred students coming in this year, which means that a fifth of the students applied. That means that those who were planning on going to Mercaria and Arucia tried to join as well.

Of course, just about anyone can summon things as long as they have energy, but they would need at least some talent if they wanted to contract a stronger beast.

You may form a contract with something like a dragon, but you should have talent good enough to house it in a place like a lake, you know? You can't just contain something like that in a well.

“We'll get rid of those who can just barely use low-class magic.”

Low-class magic really was the lowest of the low. Spells in this rank usually include stuff like “Light” and “Flame.”

Basically, it's something that just about anything except animals can... ah, I should exclude myself as well. Anyway, it's something that can literally distinguish things between humans and animals. And these people who can just barely use this kind of magic has the gall to try to get into this school?!

I am an elitist! I enjoy teaching overpowered characters! I like the elites that understands everything in just one sentence!

I just want to teach cheat characters, damn it! I lived a nice life because of my students were cheats, but these kids that applied to

this school are just hopeless.

I have to teach these kids?! No way!

-Do you just not want to work?

[No one does.]

The loli bat asked me this in curiosity next to me. She can speak physically in this form, but as she's pretending to be an elemental at the moment, she talked to me through the mind like usual.

No, before that, she didn't even talk to me in her bat form, since it was supposedly annoying... and now...

“Anyway... she isn't here.”

“Ah, after all, she's from Nermia...”

Hoho, look at this cute bastard. She told me that she'd think about it, and she decided not to apply. Hoho, I was planning on treating her well, but since things ended up like this, she'll have to end up becoming a sacrifice.

I'll destroy you at every competition you get into.

“Please don't pay attention to what family she is from. We need

to look purely at their talents. What we need right now aren't famous families, but people who will leave a mark on history."

"Right."

When we went back to filtering out the good from the bad, the office door opened, and a short, muscular dwarf walked in.

"It's done."

"Already?"

The principal said this in extreme surprise, but I myself wasn't too surprised.

Dwarves.

People talk about them being the race of master craftsmen, or the race of fire, but I know the truth.

They are the race of grinding!

No one will ever deny that the dwarves are masters when it comes to blacksmithing.

Right. They are experts when it comes to hammering.

No one will ever deny that the dwarves are masters when it comes to mining.

Right. They are experts when it comes to digging and mining.

No one will ever deny that the dwarves are masters when it comes to architecture.

Right. They are experts when it comes to designing, and they are true kings when it comes to grinding.

These dwarves had been working on this project for an entire month, so it was already about time they finished.

“How was it?”

“Hmm... as expected, the things you think of are entertaining. You didn't come up with anything new this time, but to think that all this would be for students... Hoho, the students of this school will probably get unforgettable memories of this place.”

“Student life always comes with new memories, haha.”

Right, I remember too. I always stayed behind in school, and... I can't remember. In any case, I'll make my students remember!

I will let them enjoy student life devoid of... I mean, full of hopes and dreams!

To think that that girl would reject student life like this! What was the girl's name again? Ria? In any case, I'll make her regret her own actions!

-You look like a friggin' yandere. You thinking of that kid? What if you get discovered?

[If I get discovered... I can just run again.]

-...What the. Are you gonna make escape paths again? Is that always the first thing on your agenda or something?

[The most important thing in a situation of life and death is good preparation.]

-...Just don't create reasons to get into that situation in the first place.

Even while complaining, the bat simply kept stuffing her face with cookies.

...Mm? Hold on, she isn't an elemental, though? She's made of metal, so how's she eating?!

[How are you eating cookies?]

-Are you dumb? You chew it. Do you not know how to eat



cookies?

[No... you might be able to eat if you were an elemental, but you're just metal...]

-I am an elemental though? The elemental of metal?!

[No, you know that's not true.]

-But I'm supposed to be an elemental here?

[No, you are an elemental here, but you're actually just metal, so how the hell are you eating?!]

I lost composure. Seriously, how is a metal eating cookies?! What the hell?!

-...Because I'm me?

...whatever.

Thus, I left the mystery of the bat behind me, and went back to work after receiving the map of the escape paths from the dwarf. And! After a full month! A new semester began.

# Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (7)

---

## 5.25 Their Story

[2] Nerkia Nes Leria

It's been four years since I've started attending Yugrasia.

It's almost time for me to graduate.

Unlike other schools, you can't graduate from the four schools unless you get a certain grade.

That's why I studied hard during the years. Just around the time when I was about to finish up sorting out my grades, though, a professor came to the school.

And that professor said this.

“You want the summoner's book? You can have it! Search for it! I left everything this world has to offer in that book!”

That professor was Nicerwin Ein.

He was the man whose work was being widely recognized by the different organizations in the empire, and he was known to be the

man who discovered every single summoned beasts in the world.

This man was shouting that he'd change the school.

When I saw this, I became greatly inspired by him.

And... right now, I just wish I could slap my past self.

“President! President?!”

“Ah... Yeah?”

I came back to reality when I saw the student council vice-president half-cry, half-shout at me. Right. I'm the Student Council President of this school, and...

“Professor Nicerwin and Sir Arhan is currently invading the second floor along with ten other professors!”

“The infiltrator squad in the first floor got wiped out! Other than the third floor, we're being pressured from all sides!”

“Quickly, president! Issue us an order!”

I'm the one that leads this mess, the mess we call the student liberation army.

This was what happened around a week after new students entered the school.

“Isn’t professor Nicerwin amazing?”

“Yeah... the school completely changed. Lessons are actually worth paying attention to, you know?”

“He even recruited summoner knights... We really are one of the four greats, huh.”

“Well, class times got a little longer, but it’s bearable. We’re learning stuff, too.”

It happened around the time when the sun began to come down, exactly at the time when we were waiting for our teacher to dismiss us from school.

-Students, please get back to your seats. I repeat, please get back to your seats.

A school announcement rang across the entire campus. Since we usually don’t get school announcements, we all quietly sat down and listened.

-Hello students, this is Nicerwin Ein.

When these words were uttered out of the speaker, our professor

walked into the class with a huge stack of paper. Are they doing a survey or something? When we began to think about this, the voice of Nicerwin Ein once again came on the speaker.

-Your professors must've arrived to your classes by now. Professors, please hand out the packets to the students.

The professors began to give us packets immediately. What was on this packet was...

“What the?”

“Eh?”

“...Huh?”

It wasn't a foreign language or anything. It was indeed the imperial language. But our brains were not able to register it. Why? It's like how you don't understand a math problem. In other words...

“What's this?”

The one who answered my question wasn't my professor, but rather Nicerwin Ein.

-Starting now... you will solve the problems on this packet. Those of you who fail to solve the problems will not be dismissed till

11PM.

...What did that mean? It's 7:10PM right now, so... they're telling us to stay for four hours? At that moment, our sluggish brains suddenly went into overdrive.

-In other words, this is night study time. Those who are able to solve everything may leave school. Those who are unable to solve the packet may work on something else. Working together is forbidden, but it is possible to assist yourself using the textbook.

“No way!”

“This is too much!”

Several students began shouting. Looks like everyone pretty much came back to their senses. And at the same time.

Drrr-

“W, what?!”

“A, an earthquake?”

The chairs we were sitting on began to vibrate. No, the entire school was vibrating. Then.

Clang!

Clang!

Clang!

Something black appeared on the windows with a strange sound. Black... it's similar to steel... no, maybe it is...

“Steel bars?”

One of the students uttered these words as he stared at the window. And...

-However, if you somehow make it past the professors and the adversities along the way... you will not have to stay for night study time.

The announcements ended with this.

Some students began to shout, and some students tried to reason with the professor at this point. However, the professor refused to listen to us.

And thus, the night study times began.

At that time, I wondered. I wondered who would run. Surely no

student of Yugrasia would run away from his responsibilities. That was what I thought.

And...

“Nerkia! Stop right there!”

I was the first one to go.



## Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (8)

---

If I were to make up an excuse, I'd say it was because I was in the graduating class.

I... I have nothing left to study.

It's not like I became the council president for nothing. I've studied hard over the years, and thanks to that, I can graduate just by getting a passing grade in 5 classes. In other words... I don't have anything to do!

That's why I began trying to run away from that night study time along with the seniors who stayed in the school for five, six years. But...

“Th, the hell?! Why does the school even have traps like these?”

“What the?!”

Cages would fall from the sky, floors would disappear all of the sudden...

The things that I've never experienced over the four years of my school life suddenly began happening.

And.

“...President, let us join you!”

The entire council decided to fight back!

The faculty obviously got annoyed by this, and went to Nicerwin Ein to complain. They complained about how the council, who were supposed to be model students, weren't studying. However, when Nicerwin Ein, the origin of all evils, heard this, he smiled.

“They are being model students, though?”

When I went to ask him the meaning of that later on, Nicerwin Ein answered me with a smile.

“Why do you think I told them they could skip night study time if they could run? I was telling them to all run.”

That's when I realized something. T, this man is a demon!

Of course, there was a penalty. Those who got caught while running away had to stay for an hour longer than others. ...We have to stay in school for fourteen hours!

But even so... We the students, I mean, we the heroes worked to get across the countless traps in order to get to the holy dorms.

And after a week of hard work, we managed to get to the front

gates.

“Rise, earth.”

“Uaaah!”

“W, what the?!”

When the shouts came from behind me, I quickly looked behind. What I saw there was a stone giant...

“It is immoral for a student to run from school.”

“...Sir Maroon!”

Maroon Harcen. He was a man who rose up from his status as a peasant into a knight. He was an elder in the summoner corps in the army, and he was someone who was contracted to the spirit of the earth.

And... he is also our teacher!

“Call me professor.”

“Professor! What is the meaning of this!”

I looked at my fallen comrades, and shouted out in despair. Sir

Maroon simply flashed Nicerwin's signature smile in response.

“Punishing students?”

That's when I realized something yet again. T, this guy's just like Nicerwin!

“It's unfair to use elementals!”

“Hoho, do you still not understand the words of professor Nicerwin? Run if you can. That means you have to use all kinds of tactics to escape. Did you think we'd let you off with just traps? No. If you want to escape, you must beat the entire faculty. This is... war.”

“...war?”

“Right. War. I may be a graduate from this school, but normally, I wouldn't set one foot here. Then, do you know why I came back?”

“No, I don't.”

There was a lot of talk surrounding this, actually. Why would five elders in the summoner's corps, along with the twenty soldiers below them, all come to the school? For a while, people thought that the military was bribed into giving the school all these soldiers.

Professor Maroon told me the truth behind this matter.

“I came to train talented individuals.”

“What do you mean?”

“I mean exactly what I said. The summoner’s corps once was an invincible troop that protected the empire, but things have changed now. There aren’t any talented soldiers that are coming in, and almost no one enlists any more. Even though one might have a powerful summoned beast, he would be either too weak, or have no experience in battling at all. They usually die before managing to do anything. It’s ridiculous.”

“So how does this relate to all this?”

“Nicerwin gave me a suggestion: What if I train them before they get into the army?”

“What do... what?!”

“Right. This entire process of running away is training. You tell me it’s unfair to use an elemental? You’re a summoner as well, are you not? Summon your beasts, then. Take us down, and win back your freedom!”

I decided to use my summoned beast after hearing this.

“Then I’ll... Keh!”

But even before I summoned anything... the earth elemental struck me behind my head! The summoning failed! No, wait!

“U, unfair!”

“Idiot. I told you to do whatever you could. The same applies to us. How do you expect us to block all the students in the school? We’re severely outnumbered, meaning that we have to do whatever we can as well. Did you think we’d wait for you to summon your beast? Real life isn’t like a novel. Villains don’t always wait for the hero.”

“Then, guh!”

“No excuses. Study for an extra hour.”

I felt a blow to my back once again, and my vision darkened.

A month had passed since then. The first years came to see me.

“...I heard you were the president of the student council.”

“Right. I’m the president of the council, Nerkia Nes Leria.”

“...Please lead us!”

Ten students bowed down to me as they said this.

“Lead what?”

“We are... the Student Liberation Army.”

...Eh?

“What army?”

“The Student Liberation Army. We are a group of first years who are unwilling to succumb to the night study time.”

“...I had heard about you.”

Most of the first years succumbed to the night study time. No, there was no need for them to resist it.

The tuition of this school is extremely expensive. It's more expensive than anyone would ever imagine. And then it rose.

The tuition was already a little too much for nobles. Some nobles can't even afford it.

That's why some of the new students tried to study hard enough to be able to graduate in three years.

Most of the students here would rather graduate in four or five years, but of course there were exceptions.

And since we're almost done with school anyway, we decided to go crazy. But the first years just decided to take advantage of the night study times to do their homework. I guess they'd rather work in school instead of the dorms? I mean, it's not like you can work properly in dorms anyway.

Since being in school lets you interact with other students while studying, it can be considered to be a good thing.

Only for first years, though.

But I guess not all of the first years were fine with this setup.

“By the way... why did you name it ‘Student Liberation Army’?”

“...Professor Nicerwin named us this.”

“...What.”

The story they told me was quite something. The Student Liberation Army was a club made up of twenty four first years. Hoho, a club? Nicerwin said that it was alright to run, but it's still against the school rules. It's only alright if you succeed.



But then these first years made a club out of this bs.

I wondered if these students went crazy after staying in school for so long, but after taking a look at the official club approval document in their hands, I could only laugh.

Student Liberation Army

Club Patron: Nicerwin Ein

Club Leader: Aris Ril Letia

## **25 Members**

...The patron is Nicerwin Ein.

Hoho, are they siding with the enemy now? Wait, hold on, isn't Aris the representative of the first years? She's the leader?

“Call the students back.”

A bit later, a few students came into the room.

I gave them some tea and cookies, and tried to make them a little calmer by doing so.

“Mm... So the patron of this club is Nicerwin Ein?”

“Yes.”

“...The leader of Aris.”

“Yes. She was the first one to suggest all this to us.”

“...Can't she just call her family over? I'm sure they can end all this.”

The girl was from a powerful family of a marquis. They had the power to end just about anything in this nation.

What differentiated this empire from others was the number of powerful nobles.

Normally, big empires had a huge amount of prestigious nobles. There were cases where there were over twelve thousand, even.

But Karuan was different.

There were just 29 prestigious nobles in total. Five counts, and twenty four marquises.

Honestly, this was a ridiculously low number of nobles. There was no way there could be that little in such a huge nation.

And more than half of these nobles from actually from subordinate nations. Ten are from the nation of Raina, and seven are from Zearu.

In reality, there are just ten prestigious nobles in the nation.

One of these ten nobles was the Letia family, which was the family Aris belonged to.

The daughter of this family ran away because she didn't want to study? It'd be faster to just call the family.

“She called them already.”

“...Yeah?”

“Yes. The marquis' wife came in person. She then had a private chat with professor Nicerwin... After hearing his words, she told our leader to study hard, and then left.”

“...What?”

“She also told our leader to never call her about things like this ever again.”

“Did the woman get brainwashed?”

“The same happened for other nobles as well. They all got persuaded in ten minutes or less.”

“Hah...”

I didn't think he'd be normal, but... He managed to take down Aris' mother herself. He took down the woman famous for being so particular about everything. No, he made her into his ally?

“So, what do you mean about me leading you?”

“We heard that you were one of the first to run. At the same time, you are the student council president. You also escaped to the front gates faster than anyone else.”

I ran first. That is true. I'm the student council president as well. But.

“I didn't escape. They just let me be.”

“What do you mean?”

“I mean just that. They let me be. There were plenty of traps, so they didn't really need to do anything until I got to the gates. I was only used to showcase the fact that this was a war.”

“A war?”

“yes, a war. We need to beat the faculty by making use of anything, and everything. Right, so how many summoners do you have?”

“Fifteen.”

“So ten are not yet contracted? Hmm... even so, the leader and her closest friends should have powerful beasts by their side.”

“The leader does not possess a beast yet.”

“Really? That’s annoying...”

I thought she’d have a summoned beast, but I guess not. That’d probably mean that her family left her to mature a bit before summoning anything.

“But since her family is famous for their martial arts, she should still be able to help. Alright, I will help you.”

Back then, I didn’t realize. I didn’t realize how big this organization was going to be. And because of that fact, I was able to have memories of school that I would never be able to forget about.

## Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (9)

---

“Now then, let's get onto summoning.”

“...Alright.”

This girl who was staring at me with a hateful passion in her eyes was the glorious daughter of the famous Letia family.

...Let's not talk about why she's looking at me like that. After all, the entire school's looking at me like her.

-You're totally going to get assassinated some day.

[I feel like I might've been insulted more times than the evil god himself.]

It really does feel like it. Wait, hold on, they're just staying in school for fourteen hours though? Five of those hours are spent running away, and one is spent studying? How is that bad in any shape or form?

“...Let's start?”

“Right.”

This particular girl in front of me was the very first of the first years to run. Right as she made a run for it, though, she got caught in a hunter's trap, and got hung upside down.

Of course, this was a girl. Of course, she wore a skirt. The story of her yelling at the boys staring to fuck off was already a legendary story amongst the first years! And apparently her panties were colored black.

“Let's. Start?”

“I'm starting.”

I started drawing furiously with the chalk in my hand. The magic circle was complete. Now, she just had to summon something.

[Is she on her period? Why's she so angry?]

-You saw her panties. She's shy?

[It's just a kid's panties... and it's not like I could keep her up there.]

-Hehe, but you still saw!

As I talked with the bat from afar, a light began to shine from the magic circle, and a beast began to come out. It was a cat-like creature with a white body, and red eyes...

“I want you to form a contract with me and become magica-”

Bang!

“W, what are you doing?!”

-Ew! Don’t do that so suddenly!

I immediately turned the bat into it’s bat form, and struck the beast into a different dimension.

“This is an extremely dangerous demon, so take care of it like this as soon as you see it.”

“A, alright.”

The little kid nodded with an anxious face, and began to put in power into the circle again. But really, what in the world was that? I feel like I saw something that I shouldn’t have seen. My instinct told me to send it away as soon as I could. Hoho, what the hell...

“Again!”

As expected of the daughter of a family that leads the coastal guard, the girl gave off a tyrannical aura different from other kids.



And!

“I ask you... are you my ma-”

Bang!

Once again, it's a home run! Wait, no!

“...W, what now...”

I grinned happily at Aris, who stared at me with a horrified grin.

“Not that either.”

“...Is it dangerous?”

“Of course. Copyrights would make their move if that thing made its entrance here.”

“...What's that?”

“It's an apocalyptic weapon capable of ending this world.”

But the danger of this world did not end at just that.

“If you'd like to play with me, you'd better be-”

Bang!

“Rules are made to be broke-”

Bang!

“I want to be a pirate ki-”

Bang!

“I’m going to be the next hokag-”

Bang!

“I’m Optimus Pri-”

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

“Hah... hah...”

-I’m tired...

“...Why are you hitting everything?!”

I ignored the girl who simply was unable to realize her mistakes, and caught my breath. Then, I turned back to the girl and spoke.

“...Again!”

“...I’m tired!”

“I’m even more tired than you are.”

She’s just summoning the things I’ve seen before... is she dead set on destroying the world or something? What is this?

Even as I complained in my heart, I closely examined the circle that my future slave... I mean, my future summoner was using to summon her beast.

And.

Bang!

“Geh?!”

-...Why'd you hit her?

[...Out of instinct?]

-You know who she is?

[...Yeah.]

-Who's she supposed to be?

[God.]

## Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (10)

---

The goddess of wisdom, war, cooking, pottery, and civilization.

She was someone who was born wearing a full suit of armor and was someone who conquered an entire city along with a god who could be called her uncle. But unlike this relative of hers, who was universally hated by just about everyone, she was a goddess loved by all, Athena!

This goddess, Athena, was currently thinking about something very deeply.

‘What?’

She felt herself get sent flying due to a blow to her head. But the sudden pain she felt from it was something that even she could not understand.

Greek mythology was something that appeared just as much as Norse mythology in the modern world. As one of the chief gods in this mythology, Athena was someone who was very familiar with forming contracts with humans. But none of them ever hit her in the head as soon as she got summoned!

Aris, the girl who summoned the goddess, took a look at Athena with a dazed face.

‘Eh, a woman wearing armor... she’s like a Valkyrie, but that shield with the face on it is...’

It’s not like goddesses never get summoned in this world. They occasionally do appear to form contracts with humans as well. Because of this, Aris was well aware that what got summoned just now was Athena herself.

After all, the goddess was someone who created many legendary generals in the Empire!

And as her brain started to work again, she realized one thing.

‘He just beat up a goddess!’

“Professor!”

She shouted out of extreme shock, but Naruan was already running.

-Oi, master, you said she was a goddess...

[I already hit her, there’s no changing that. So...]

-So?

[We beat her senseless.]

Even though her armor managed to absorb some of the shocks from the attack, Athena still trembled at the immense pain she was feeling. When she saw a man run towards her frantically, she immediately put up her shield.

“Aegis!”

This shield was something that Perseus had given Athena after his journey; the shield adorned with the face of the Medusa! This shield was something that could petrify anyone who stared into it.

But!

“I just don’t have to look at it.”

Unfortunately, Naruan was someone who was very familiar with mythologies! He closed his eyes and pushed Athena down to the ground.

“Kya!”

Athena, whose legs were already trembling from shock, fell with that simple push. And.

“Ehe~.”

When she looked back up, she got greeted with the face of a

silver-haired girl.

“W, what are you trying to do to me?!”

“It’s ok. Even though a woman’s face can be considered her life, attacks from me won’t hurt you.”

At the same time, Arcadia balled up her fists and raised them to the sky with a cute grin.

“Hiya!”

“Kya!”

“Yap! Hoi! Bam! Bam!”

“W, what the! S, stop! Haaanh?!”

C, c, combo breaker! While the damage is near zero, the pain inflicted is enough to leave Athena moaning in pain!

“W, what are you doing?!”

“Ah, careful. You’ll turn to stone if you look into that shield.”

“Professor! She’s a Goddess! A Goddess, for goodness sakes! Why in the world are you beating up a god?!”



“It’s ok. It’s not like she can do anything in this world anyway.”

“What do you mean, it’s ok?! What if she decides to help an enemy nation?!”

“That’s why I’m doing this.”

Naruan turned to the spirit of the bat, who was hitting Athena with loud huffs and reddened eyes, and spoke.

“Hit her some more.”

“You don’t have to tell me!”

“S, stahp! Hah?! N, nho!”

“No? Yes!”

Swoosh! Arcadia’s hands began moving again with it making a swooshing noise. Of course, this sound wasn’t coming from her arms, but rather her mouth.

“Hup! Yah!”

The goddess tried to resist, but she couldn’t muster the strength to do so. The pain she felt was unlike anything she ever felt before!

This pain was beginning to mess with her judgment.

“I, I’m dying!”

“I’m telling you, I can’t kill?”

“J, just kill me!”

“Heehee! Why’d I kill someone as pretty as you? No, before that, as an innocent, weak little girl, I dislike violence! Therefore, I do not murder others!”

“D, demon!”

Arcadia brutally beat the goddess as she made various sound effects with her voice. Naruan shook his head as he saw this.

‘She can always unsummon herself.’

Being summoned by the summoner is the beast’s choice, and being unsummoned is the beast’s choice as well. In reality, many beasts decided to cancel their summons because they didn’t like a summoner’s face.

But of course, the word “unsummon” no longer existed in the brain of Athena. Naruan knew that well.

Therefor.

“Goddess, there is a way for you to escape this predicament.”

“Urgh! W, what is it?! I am willing to sell my soul to the devil! Just let me out of here!”

“Form a contract with that girl.”

When Naruan pointed to Aris, the girl walked over reluctantly next to him.

“Can’t I continue? This feels great.”

Arcadia expressed her discontent, but Naruan just ignored her.

“If you form a contract with this girl, you can stop the pain.”

“Eh? Wait!”

“What do you mean, wait?! Just do it!”

Aris tried to step back, but Athena wasn’t about to let go of her lifeline.

“Contract me! Contract me now! I’ll lend you my wisdom and streng... hah! S, stop hitting!”

“No! I can’t hit you once you form a contract!”

“Q, quickly! Contract! I’ll lend you my everything! Just do it!”

Aris was forced to nod at Athena, who was screaming desperately while grabbing onto her foot with her right hand.

“Y, yes, I’ll do it!”

At the same time, a blue symbol of a bird appeared on Aris’ hand. Although this was an unfair contract, the symbol of Athena still had appeared.

“Now then, Aris, unsummon the goddess.”

“...Unsummon?”

Only then did Athena remember the term. The goddess looked up at Naruan with a face of shock. Naruan simply made a “all according to plan” face as he looked at Aris.

“Just think of sending her back to where she came from.”

“T, this is a sc...”

“Unsummon?” “am...”

Athena was unable to even properly complete her sentence as she became unsummoned.

“Yah! This feels good!”

Naruan grabbed Arcadia by the girl’s hand, and stood up. Aris was still looking at Naruan with a dazed face.

“...So is the contract complete?”

“Yes.”

“...Are contracts usually like this?”

“Who cares? It worked.”

Naruan smiled, and immediately headed back to his office. The very next day, the front gates of the school had a placard that read [Aris Ril Letia contracts a god-ranked beast!].

After this point, not a single parent opposed Naruan’s methods of teaching.

“No way!”

Almost all the students opposed it, though.

# Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (11)

---

“We can't keep going like this.”

Nerkia nodded as soon as he heard this.

“Far too little first and seconds years are actually doing anything.”

The way that Yugrasia, no, the four schools worked was simple. New students get into first year, and after they spend a year in school, they become second years. After that, they become a third year.

The first years can be described with the word “pride”.

As many of them got tutored in their respective noble families, everyone had an extremely large amount of pride. Well, pride is a nice way of putting it. In reality, these students just didn't have common sense.

Since they got loaded with the best kind of education in their homes, it's expected that they'd be very smart! This is the same for schools like Mercaria as well. There's a huge difference between kids who work to earn money and study in their free time, and kids who just get taught by great teachers in their homes at all times.

Because of that, the kids in first year are chock full of people who thinks they're great. That's why a lot of accidents and fights occur in this year.

The second years can be described with the word "calm".

In the previous year, the ranks between students get chosen. These students realize how insignificant they are, and begin to quiet down.

This is also the time when they learn about how societies work, and it is also the time when they care about how teachers look at them the most. In this time, students get outside to learn from their seniors.

Lastly, the third years. They can be described with the word... "chaos".

This is the time when the personalities from the first years appear again. This is when everyone's pretty much done with everything. They've adapted to the environment of the school, and have gotten smarter. They've become much more adept in avoiding getting into trouble.

But the thing that's the most important here is... the third years have nothing to do. Once they enter their third year, everyone knows how to graduate.

They know if they have to graduate in that year, stay for one

more year, or stay for two years.

They start making deals with their family, and begin enjoying school life. During this time, many relationships begin to form, but grades begin to fall as a result.

Because of this, many of the third years are trying to run from the night study time! But the number of first years in the Student Liberation Army just rose to 30 people (five joined), and only seven of the second years are trying to run.

“...Even though the key to our victory is at the location of the second years...”

Yugrasia had a total of twelve floors, and floors three to eight were used as classrooms. The key to victory was at the place where the first and the third years could meet, the classes of the second years!

Not only that, unlike the first years, whose numbers only amounted to a hundred people, there were more than three hundred second years in the school. Therefore, it could be said that the classes of the second years was where the sleeping dragon lay.

“We can do it as long as the second years make their move. After all, most of the teachers that teach the second years have to try to stop us from running away.”

It was mentioned before, but the third years are those who could



be called veteran summoners. They are also a grade that contains a host of people who stayed for four to five years along with the most amount of students. In other words, they are the strongest students in the entire school. These students are dangerous even to the teachers! After all, this was the grade that managed to get all the way down to the first floor from the eighth floor. And since there's up to eight hundred students in this grade, many of the professors set up their defenses in the seventh floor.

“If the second years come with us, we can win.”

“But they are slaves to their grades.”

The school changed. This means that the world of the students changed.

In the past, students could study for up to five years before graduating, but things have changed. Stay in a place like this for five years? Nonsense!

The third years who planned to study for one or two more years were currently crying tears of blood, and the fifth years were wondering why they decided to study for five years when they could've graduated in their first year. Everyone was pretty much cursing their past selves for being so lazy.

The second years thought the same as well.

-If I stay here for one more year, I die!

Let's finish school in one year!

For the first time in history, all the second years were trying to graduate in three years!

“How are the test problems?”

Nerkia, who tried to find the most peaceful solution to escaping, was unable to hide his shock at the report he just got.

“...I've tried requesting the Summoner's Association and the Magic Towers to take a look at it, but they barely understood anything. According to my uncle, the answer to these problems... are probably in Nicerwin's book of summoning...”

“...In other words, we can't graduate with this?”

“We might, as long as we stay here for ten years.”

“Haha, the school would be gone by then. They wouldn't have graduates for ten years, after all. It would be faster to make the school go bankrupt.”

“...Should we just shut down the school?”

“Oi, you idio...”

Nerkia, who was just about to shoot out a stream of swears to the student who said this, felt some powerful realization strike his head.

-W, we can do that?!

“T, that’s genius?”

“Wait, hold on. Don’t you guys get why this happened?”

Aris stopped everyone as soon as the discussion turned into that of how to end the school.

“The school became like this because they were about to go down! What do you think they’d do if their situation became worse? They’d get even worse than now!”

“...No way they’d do that...”

“Think about it. Our enemy is Nicerwin.”

The title “professor” had disappeared a long time ago. But then again, students never addressed teachers by their title when talking privately anyway!

“...Well, can’t refute that.”

“Eh, if they make things worse than this...”

“They would stop us from sleeping.”

“Mm... we just have to give up sleep.”

“...They might actually do that?”

“Since the faculty’s full of former soldiers, they should be able to stay up for a few nights?”

“Holy shit, they aren’t gonna let us sleep?”

“...Silence!”

Nerkia shouted when the meeting room began to get noisy. When everyone turned towards him, Nerkia stood up from his spot, and began to speak.

“There is no longer a place we can run to. It is true that classes got much better than before. It is true that we are improving at great speeds. But... our freedom is being sacrificed in the process! As students begin summoning extremely strong beasts, our complaints become meaningless. Now... It is time for us to take back our freedom! And today... today is the day we begin our first battle!”

A warmth began to rise up in everyone's chests. Right. They've realized something after countless tries of getting out. They can't win like this. They needed to do something new!

“Comrades, today, we may have to sacrifice many of us. Many of our friends may fall in this great battle. But! Each and every one of our sacrifices will be the stepping stones to our freedom. So let us fight! Let us fight against our tyrants! We will take back our freedom with our own hands!”

-Uoooooh!

Nerkia's speech was able to rile up the morale of the students in the room. And when this morale reached its peak, Nerkia shouted.

“We start at seven! When the clock strikes seven, we all move simultaneously!”

The resistance of the students was finally beginning to take form.

# Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (12)

---

“Now, here are your tests...”

“It's here!”

“Uoooh!”

“Oi, you bastards! At least pretend to take the sheet!”

7:10AM. As soon as the professors entered the room, the third years burst outside. And!

“The target is the eleventh floor!”

“Take the stairs! We still outnumber the faculty! Stop them from following us at the stairs!”

Again, most of the defenses of the faculty are located in the seventh floor. This was to prevent the faculty from being pressured by everyone in the floors below after setting up defenses in the eighth floor. Since most of them are in the seventh floor, there's no way the floors above floor eight would be guarded by anyone!

The professors soon realized what the third years were trying to do, and attempted to go up, but it was difficult to get through two

entire floors guarded by students.

“We leave it to you, president!”

“Show us your persuasion skills!”

“Prove to us that you didn’t go to school for four years for nothing!”

The sea of students parted before Nerkia, like the red sea parted for Moses. Countless encouragements cheered on Nerkia from both sides.

“Right, I’ll do it!”

Bang!

The student council, who managed to take over the announcement room, managed to set up an announcement to the entire school with the sound tech students.

Beep!

-My name is Nerkia Nes Leria. And I want to ask each every one of you students, no, my comrades, a question. Aren’t you... angry?

Sure, us third years are all trying to get out of here, since we’re

done with everything. To the first years, who still have much to overcome, and to the second years, who realized the harshness of the world, the great wall known as the faculty might seem impossible to break through. Right, this is reality. After all, the grades you get in your second year determine your entire future. After all, the companies in the empire would receive your grades after the end of second year. And one of the biggest things that determine your grade in this school are the professors. Because of this, you need to try to look good to the teachers, and you need to try not to rebel in front of them. I get it. This is what reality is like.

But... let's not think about reality for a moment. Aren't you angry? Aren't you angry that you have to stay in school even after classes end to study? Do they think we do nothing back in our dorms? Do they think we don't even study back in our dorms? To be honest, we don't. Of course we don't. We don't do shit even if they tell us to study inside school, so why'd we study in our free time? But even if this makes us angry, we need to stay quiet. But... but then again. It really does get me angry. If you're trying to get me to study, just make me study. Why are you provoking us to run? If you just tell us to study and end it at that, we'd just study quietly in school. We'd complain, and run every once in a while, but we'd mostly study. But the faculty just decided to tell us to run outright. Who do they think we are? We're one of the students that go to one of the most prestigious schools in the empire. We outnumber the faculty by ten times. But even so, they're still provoking us!

By the way... you know what makes me really angry? They told us to run, and we tried to run, but we failed countless times. That's what makes me angry. Can't students win against teachers? Is it impossible for students... no, us... to surpass our teachers?! I don't think that's true. If, if we as the students, gather our power. If we



decide to unite together! We'd be able to take down any faculty in any of the schools! That's what I think. And so... I'll just end this with this one statement.

Those of you who are pissed off about staying after school. Those of you who are pissed about having to be the teacher's pet. And, those of you who are pissed at seeing us fail all the time, please help. At least a little bit.

Beep!

Nerkia put down the mike when the announcement ended.

"This is the best we can do. We can only trust the underclassmen from now! Let us go! To the battlefield!"

"There is no need to go, for I am here."

"Professor Arhan?!"

"They already took down our defenses?!"

"No. Since professor Nicerwin told us that it was about time for the students to move towards the upper floors, we decided to set up some defenses up above. But to think you'd go for the announcement room. We didn't even consider that happening. So, you say you're angry?! Then take me down!"

Professor Arhan and the professors next to him summoned their beasts. Professor Arhan had an armor-spirit! A giant dragonscale armor was slowly appearing above the professor. And the teachers behind him each summoned an earth elemental and a wind elemental!

“Now, let us...”

“H, hold on!”

“Even though you are of the student council, I cannot go easy on you. No, I shouldn’t!”

A giant mace appeared in the hands of professor Arhan. The man usually used a giant sword in battle, but as he was going against students, he was unable to kill them! The moment he was about to swing his weapon, though, Nerkia stopped him.

“The stuff here’s expensive!”

“Ah... Sorry.”

Arhan immediately stopped his attack, and moved away. Right. While the students united firmly as they raised their grades, skills, and knowledge while running away, the materials that got broken along the way were costing the school an immense amount of money!

By the way, the tools inside the announcement room were all

magic tools. Made in Magic Tower! If people began fighting in a place like this, the school would lose a colossal amount of cash.

This is something that neither the faculty nor the student council wants!

Students lined up in a single file, and exited the room one by one. Then, they all turned to professor Arhan, and prepared to fight...

“Run!”

...none of them were stupid enough to fight!

“Y, you!”

The two professors behind Arhan immediately cast spells to attack the running students, but the student council, who could be considered to be the elites of the school, dodged the attack and began moving down.

“We have a huge number of teachers downstairs!”

“What do we do now?”

“Just charge through! The target is the first floor! The door to Avalon lies in the first floor!”

-Uoooooh!

The students on the eighth floor made up their minds, and began moving. No, they tried to move down.

“...What’s this?”

But what lay in front of them were countless corpses. No, these were their comrades spread out across the floor trembling in fear.

“Comrade Aris, just what is going on?”

Nerkia, who was the first to witness this, shouted to Aris, who was trembling in a suit of shining armor.

“...A demon. A demon is here.”

Her pale face turned even paler, and she raised her finger to point towards a single place.

“Heehee! Wham wham! Yap! Hiya!”

On that day, students received a grim reminder.

They lived in fear of the silver demon and were disgraced to live in these cages we called Yugrasia.

# Chapter 5. Welcome To The Summoner's School. (13)

---

## 5.25 Their Story

[3]Aris Ril Letia: I saw the devil.

“Now, here are your t...”

We ran the moment the professor opened his mouth. We could hear him shout in annoyance behind us, but we ignored it.

“Don't fight the professor. Our target is the upper floors. Today, our goal is not to escape!”

-Understood, boss!

I made them call me that since they kept calling me “miss” and talked to me in a respectful tone, but why is this making me feel like a gang leader..?

-I can feel a powerful energy pulsating nearby. Be careful.

[Thank you for the warning.]

God-ranked summons really were something else. While Athena

doesn't have any powerful attacks or anything, she was still a goddess of war and wisdom.

Her experiences and wisdom allowed me to get away from several critical situations, and her weapons allowed me to increase my survivability by a huge amount.

“What the?!”

“Attack!”

When we, who almost always went down when trying to escape, went up, the professors guarding floor five all turned around in shock. But did we wait for them to recover? No! After all, they never did wait for us when we tried to run!

“Appear, Krinn!”

“Out with you, Ahma!”

“Destroy your enemies, Macis!”

The twenty students here all summoned their beasts and began attacking the professors. Even though many of our comrades here contracted weaker beasts, we still had the initiative.

“Boss, please win for our sakes!”

“We believe in you, boss!”

“Word hard, boss!”

“Alright! You can definitely trust me to succeed! Seniors, let’s go!”

I took the ten of our elites and began walking upwards. And the moment we broke into the sixth floor, the voice of the Student Council President began to ring throughout the entire school.

Beep!

-My name is Nerkia Nes Leria. And I want to ask each every one of you students, no, my comrades, a question. Aren’t you... angry?

“Alright, he’s begun! Let’s go!”

The representative of the second years led their grade and joined us. It was now time to take over the seventh floor!

-Sure, us third years are all trying to get out of here, since we’re done with everything. To the first years, who still have much to overcome, and to the second years, who realized the harshness of the world, the great wall known as the faculty might seem impossible to break through. Right, this is reality. After all, the grades you get in your second year determine your entire future. After all, the companies in the empire would receive your grades after the end of second year. And one of the biggest things that

determine your grade in this school are the professors. Because of this, you need to try to look good to the teachers, and you need to try not to rebel in front of them. I get it. This is what reality is like.

“You bastards?!”

The fights began the moment the professors heard us going up to the seventh floor. As we were on the lower ground, we were at the disadvantage, but we still outnumbered them greatly!

[Goddess!]

-Right, you may borrow my power!

“Hero’s armor, appear!”

It becomes easier for a summoner to draw on his or her beast’s power when the two mutually agree to share their power. Of course, when a beast doesn’t agree to lend its power, it takes a lot of strength for the summoner to use the beast’s strength. But as I and the goddess both have a mutual enemy, she is supporting me 100%! She is on my side!

-But... let’s not think about reality for a moment. Aren’t you angry? Aren’t you angry that you have to stay in school even after classes end to study? Do they think we do nothing back in our dorms? Do they think we don’t even study back in our dorms? To be honest, we don’t. Of course we don’t. We don’t do shit even if they tell us to study inside school, so why’d we study in our free



time? But even if this makes us angry, we need to stay quiet. But... but then again. It really does get me angry. If you're trying to get me to study, just make me study. Why are you provoking us to run? If you just tell us to study and end it at that, we'd just study quietly in school. We'd complain, and run every once in a while, but we'd mostly study. But the faculty just decided to tell us to run outright. Who do they think we are? We're one of the students that go to one of the most prestigious schools in the empire. We outnumber the faculty by ten times. But even so, they're still provoking us!

Swears began to pop out of the professors' mouths as soon as the Student Council President said this.

"Bullshit. We all know you'd run even if we didn't tell you to run!"

"Nerkia was the first to go, damn it! Why the hell is he even the Student Council President?!"

"Did you forget that the Student Council was composed of Yugrasia's greatest blockheads? Remember how they decided to host a crossdressing contest in the national festival and failed spectacularly?"

"...Failed? Didn't they attract the most amount of people? I mean, we may be lacking in a lot of areas compared to Arucia or Marcis, but it is true that we have more pretty boys..."

"Mm... I don't know much about the school since I got hired this

year. But honestly speaking, this school performed the best in the last year's festival."

"So what?! Do you think the elders want to see some crossdressed boys? They want to see sword fights and magic showcases! That's why we got marked by them!"

"Ah..."

Even while arguing like that, they managed to skillfully block us off with their skills. But!

"The spear of Athena, Aegis, come!"

I summoned the spear and shield and charged forward. Even though these are merely fake versions of the real thing, they are still extremely powerful!

"Haah!"

A single swing of the spear brought down the stone wall that was blocking the staircase. The shield blocked all attacks that were aimed at me and those that were unable to be blocked all got bounced off by my armor!

-Pressure is extremely important in war. If the enemy has a hero capable of killing a thousand, we just have to pressure them with ten thousand. War is not a one-on-one battle. It is a battle numbering between thousands, a battle between nations. And the

battle here is something where the students severely outnumber their enemies! As long as we strike at the right moment, even the seemingly invincible faculty can be brought down!

I listened to her instructions, and immediately ran up the staircase. I only had one role. I was to become the goddess of victory who would sweep in the feeling of hope into our soldiers!

-By the way... you know what makes me really angry? They told us to run, and we tried to run, but we failed countless times. That's what makes me angry. Can't students win against teachers? Is it impossible for students... no, us... to surpass our teachers?! I don't think that's true. If, if we as the students, gather our power. If we decide to unite together! We'd be able to take down any faculty in any of the schools! That's what I think. And so... I'll just end this with this one statement.

Clack!

As the president's speech was about to come to an end, we reached the seventh floor. I swung the spear in a wide arc and shouted.

"This floor is ours!"

The second years charged in as the professors dodged my attack. The ten professors on this floor were unable to suppress the charge, and we were able to push them to the eighth floor's staircase.

“This is the end!”

But just as we were about to finish it all, “that” appeared.

“Heh~? So master really wasn’t lying? Everyone’s here!”

A little girl was seen, climbing up the path we cleared for freedom.

-U, uhaaa?! R, run!!

A silver hair and a long, white one piece dress. From afar, the girl’s big eyes and smile gave off a feeling of mysteriousness and purity. But I knew that this thing was an evil spirit that could beat up gods and goddesses!

-Those of you who are pissed off about staying after school. Those of you who are pissed about having to be the teacher’s pet. And, those of you who are pissed at seeing us fail all the time, please help. At least a little bit.

Beep!

When everyone’s eyes turned to the little girl walking up, the president’s speech ended. The little girl then looked up to the ceiling with a curious face.

“Eh? Did it end? He’d come down then, right? Since master told

me to get the president...”

The little girl scrunched up her face a bit as she thought. After a moment, her face straightened out into a big grin as she reached a conclusion.

“So for now, everyone here’s dead?”

Shup!

As everyone stared at the little girl jump up towards them, I shouted to warn everyone about the impending doom.

“That’s Nicerwin’s summon! Run!”

“Eh? Tha... kuh?”

“Gurgh!”

The two seniors who first came across her screamed, and fell down. Only then did everyone realize what peril they were in, and raised their shields. But of course, that wasn’t enough!

-Don’t even bother using magic shields! That thing can ignore a shield made by god! Just block with physical objects or attack first!

“Attack! We need to take it down!”

When I conveyed the words of the frantic goddess to the students, two third years immediately moved to dispatch the enemy.

“Garett! Go tear her a new one!”

“Nogan! Smash her!”

A giant wolf ran forward with its teeth bared, and an earth elemental raised its colossal arm in order to attack the girl.

The girl was about to be either smashed or ripped apart! However!

-GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!

-Guooooooooo!

The wolf cried out in pain as soon as it bit the girl, and the earth elemental returned to dust.

“Kuo?!”

“C, cough! A, a forced unsummon?!”

The senior who summoned the elemental fell forward with a

moan and the senior who summoned the wolf shouted in shock as his face paled more than ever.

“Hehe, are you idiots? Attacks aren’t much. An attack counts when two things collide, and pain rises as a result. Think about it, if a person punches a brick wall, would the fist hurt, or would the wall hurt?”

The girl raised her finger and went “tsk tsk” as she spoke.

“The answer is, the person who hit the wall is the one hurting!”

As soon as the sentence came to an end, the girl balled up her hands and jumped up.

“Meaning that, you’ll feel hurt no matter what you do!”

“Kwek?!”

“Whoosh! Vuun!”

“Sound effects from your m... gah!”

“R, run!”

“B, block her!”

The students either ran or attempted to block the girl, no, the silver demon who advanced while shooting out sound effects from her mouth. But most, if not all of them all turned into a living sacrifice.

“Eh? It’s the girl who contracted with the woman who felt really good to beat up?”

“Hmph!”

Crack!

I barely managed to block the girl’s attack with my shield. The shock that I got from the strength of her attack was nearly indescribable.

‘H, her strength?!’

-D, dodge! Y, you mustn’t allow yourself to get hit by that!

[B, but it looks like I can block her attacks as long as I don’t get a direct hit from her!]

-E, eh? So physical defenses work? But it’s still best to just dodge! We still don’t have a foolproof plan against her!

“Heh, you blocked?”



“Hii?!”

“Too weak~!”

I immediately attempted to stab her with my spear when she grinned at me, but the girl simply dodged the attack and aimed for my wrist.

-Throw away your weapon!

When I threw away the spear as instructed, the girl immediately grabbed the spear and stabbed it down on the ground.

“A good spear! But I dun need!”

The girl leaped forward!

“Hmph?!”

I tried to move further away from her, but then the girl stopped in her place. She jumped back towards her spear.

“The reason I moved back was!”

The moment her feet landed on the spear, the weapon bent back, and sprung her forward!

“To gain speed!”

Bang!

The girl’s flying kick was nearing me at an extreme speed.

[Goddess, please grant me strength and power!]

-Ah, wait! I’m gonna be damaged if you use that! N, no!

[I’m gonna use it!]

I decided that I would not be able to block her attack with my own power, and decided to merge my soul with that of the goddess’ using a technique known as spirit merging.

-I, I don’t like you!

My body let in half of the goddess’ soul into it. As I was unable to take in all of her soul, I was only able to use a portion of her power.

“Haah!”

Our wills to survive worked together for now and the Aegis Shield began to shine.

Bang!

“Kuh!”

I was sent flying from the kick, but I still managed to block it!

-Ugh, t, too strong! I can't block the next one!

My legs were already trembling. This was dangerous. Even though I borrowed strength from the goddess, my body was that of an average female. It was insufficient to block an attack from something that could destroy immortals!

“Hehe? Did you block it? You blocked twice! As expected, you're fun?!”

When the girl began to laugh out of excitement, both my face as well as the goddess' turned pale.

-Aris, stop using spirit merge.

[G, goddess!]

-G, go die alone.. I don't want to get beat up...

[We're contracted together, though!]

-T, this was a cheat! It was a cheat!

Just as the friendship between a summoner and her summon was about to break, a miracle occurred.

Rustle!

“...Eh? What’s this?”

The eyes of the girl met with that of a single student who had just stood up.

“What? Did you pretend to be passed out? Is that it? What a !”

“H, huaaaa!”

As the boy tried to run from fear, the girl smiled an evil smile and kicked the boy down from behind. She then promptly mounted herself onto the boy!

“Bad kids need to be punished!”

“Kueee?! Uaaaah! I’m, I’m sor... Geeeh!”

Crack crack crack!

Seeing the boy faint and come back to life again and again from each hit made me paler by the second.

“Comrade Aris, just what is going on?”

At that moment, the student council arrived.

“...A demon. A demon is here.”

I managed to spit out a few words after swallowing my fear. Then, I pointed to a single place.

“Heehee! Wham wham! Yap! Hiya!”

There was a drooling human who was repeatedly trying to say “forgive me..” along with a silver demon who was beating up the human mercilessly.

# **Chapter 6 - Hell Does Not End**

# Chapter 6. Hell Does Not End (1)

---

Time passes.

This is true for both a dragon that lives for nearly an eternity, and a mayfly that lives for just a single day.

That time passed in Yugrasia as well.

“Hah... I don’t know much about anything else, but... Your endurance is really something to be respected.”

Professor Arhan, who was currently staring at the Student Council coming down to the second floor, sighed.

“No, I guess this is just to be expected from the Student Council?”

The spring weather that had been there when school started had disappeared. Summer had begun, and the vacation had begun as well.

Well, vacation started... but only in name.

Professor Nicerwin, who even saw himself as a devil incarnate, told the children to come to school even on vacation. The students became outraged, and sent letters of complaint to their families.

But as their families had already been brainwashed by Naruan,

their efforts were futile.

The parents all sent Naruan letters that wished him luck, and told the children to study hard. Not only were the students shocked by the fact that they had to go to school in summer, they were also shocked by the fact that their parents had betrayed them.

“No way!”

“This is a lie!”

“Let’s just leave!”

Of course, the students all became outraged! They all walked to the front gates in order to get out, but they were all greeted by a single girl at the place.

“Where you guys going?”

After seeing the little girl’s innocent smile, the students were all forced to get back to the school.

On the day when the students all decided to rise up, they became aware of the girl who turned everything back to nothingness.

No, perhaps it’s more accurate to say that they experienced it!



Nerkia's speech had made everyone feel something hot rise up in their chests, and that was what made the first and second years make their move.

“Let's help the president!”

Once someone in the class said this, everyone in the grade moved out to find Nerkia. And in the end, they managed to see 'it'.

“Cough... R, run!”

They saw a scene that made even professors they disgusted(?). They saw the council president trying to reach out to them with eyes of death.

“Heehee, there's more! Let's go partytime?”

They even saw a silver girl in the middle of the battlefield, grinning at them!

The aftermath was simple. The one who had run out saying “How dare you!” and “It's a beast without its master! Take it down!” was corpse number 421 or so.

At this point, it looked like the students were going to just study during summer vacation. But there were still those who went against this oppression!

It was the student council! Along with a small group of people from the Student Liberation Army! These people moved with the motto, “Students exist to play!”

And in this group, a student proposed an idea.

“We just don’t have to go to school?”

It was the genius that came up with the idea to end the school! Thanks to this idea, the students were able to spend their own time in the dorms. That is, they were able to stay till dinner.

“Mm...”

“What?”

“...W, why are you here?”

“Kyaaa! Pervert! What’s a boy doing in a girl’s room?!”

Several people woke up on the cold, hard floor. When a few students screamed in surprise, everyone slowly woke up.

“W, what? I, I was sleeping in my room just now?”

“Eh? Me too... hold on, isn’t this school?”

“W, what are you talking about?! School?! We’re in school?!”

A bright light shone upon the groups just then.

-Greetings... and welcome.

This light was something that was coming out of a recording orb! From the light, a masked man with a familiar voice appeared.

-You are students who decided to not come to school. Well, this was to be expected.

“...Isn’t that Nicerwin?”

“Yeah. But more importantly, did we get kidnapped?”

“We got kidnapped to school...”

-Those who do not appreciate going to school do not deserve to go to school. You have not appreciated being able to go to school, but not now. Let the game begin.

“What the fuck?”

“...Not appreciating going to school? The hell?”

“Just who made us like this?! Who do you think made us hate

school?!”

-This is a game of escape. Friends, you will now lose the privilege to come to school during vacation. You have only one way of getting this privilege back. Try to get out of school.

“...The hell?”

“...Can’t go to school?”

“...No going to school?”

“...Isn’t this just us not being able to get out?”

At that moment, the cloud of confusion instantly got cleared away. And.

-What the fuck?!

When their brain began working again, they all simultaneously thought the same thing!

“Run!”

Bang!

They tried to get ou...

“Where do you think you’re going?”

“...Seriously, are you people school fairies or something? Don’t you guys sleep? Do you live in the school or something?!”

Nerkia shouted this out loud as he met professor Maroon out the door. When he did so, professor Maroon answered with a bored face.

“Since I live in the dorms as well, I suppose you could say that I live in the school. But by the way... do you guys know something?”

“Know what?”

“Normally, the students outnumber the faculty, but... this time, it’s the opposite.”

“Eh?”

The Student Council did a quick calculation as they processed this new information.

Normally = 100+ Professors vs. Hundreds of Students.

Now = 100+ Professors vs. 30 Students.

“...We're screwed?”

“Have fun in school.”

“No! Not like this!”

The Student Council charged bravely! But!

“Ha?!”

Nerkia woke up, and let out a sigh.

“Ah, so it was a dream.”

The moment he let his guard down.

Pi!

-Greetings... and welcome.

“N, no!”

-You are students who decided to not come to school. Well, this was to be expected. Those who do not appreciate going to school do not deserve to go to school. You have not appreciated being able to go to school, but not now. Let the game begin.

“Noooooooo!”

Nerkia’s scream of despair rang across the entire campus.

## Chapter 6. Hell Does Not End (2)

---

“Hah... Looks like I made the right choice.”

Aris let out a sigh as she heard the screams from behind her.

“If I were with them... it’s scary to even think about it.”

Gender doesn’t matter. No matter who you are, you live in the school. At least they let the students have food and use the showers? But that’s all restricted as well. Freedom doesn’t exist for them anymore.

-You made the right decision.

[Right. I mean, by the time vacation ends, we’d have had to go participate in inter-school competitions anyway, meaning that we’d inevitably be out of school by that time.]

A month after the vacation ends, the empire’s celebrates the day of its creation. The four schools get together then, and host a plethora of competitions.

But there’s no way they’d be able to host something like that just in a month! Plus, since this event is crucial for all the schools, many of the students and teachers have to stay inside the school to work on the competitions.



And Aris was the eldest in the Letia family, the family of coast guards. Although she wasn't set to be the leader of the family thanks to her younger brother, she still ranked as one of the top five leader candidates.

So even if she were to go back home, she'd have to face ungodly amounts of work and studying. It was better to just stay at school.

"School isn't so bad."

This was what Aris thought as she listened to the lecture with the screams from the hallways as background music.

Well, that was the case, but...

"...Council president, are you mad? What are you even trying to do?"

Aris shot out a few words at the beings that she saw in front of her.

As students walked back down after school at four, relishing the fact that they were able to go back to their dorms at a normal time, they found that their path had been blocked by about thirty people that were stuck inside the school.

"Hahaha... comrade Aris... no, Aris. Do we seem normal to you?"

The man's red eyes spat out pure madness, and his uncut beard gave him a feeling of wildness as well. This, coming from a group of thirty, made even Aris step back in fear!

“Hahaha... the school is a very nice place. I, as a Student Council President, just can't stand the fact that many of you cannot recognize that fact. I would like to teach you a bit. What about it? Ah, by the way, I refuse any refusals.”

The Student Council President definitely didn't seem normal at all.

Aris reacted immediately upon seeing this.

“The president has gone mad! Attack!”

When Aris shouted this with a bag in one hand and a sword in the other, everyone in the student body simultaneously took up their weapons and charged.

“Huahahaha! Comrades, let the game begin! If you break through, you win. If you don't, you'll end up just like us!”

Nerkia grinned as he looked at the flood of students coming towards him.

‘All according to plan!’

“Get him!”

-Uoooh!

“What the hell is going on?!”

When professor Maroon shouted this out of surprise, one of the professors who realized what was going on paled.

“T, the students are all charging towards us!”

“W, what?!”

Stuff like this didn't happen in vacations. After all, Nicerwin decided to show his humane side by letting them go home early, and not have homework after school.

Because of that, the teachers only had to deal with the Student Council, and there were just ten teachers who guarded the first floor. The teachers wanted to give them at least a thread of hope, hence the reason why there were just ten teachers, but!

‘These footsteps... there's more than a hundred people coming this way?’

Professor Maroon bit his lips, and shouted.

“Prepare for battle! Also, call for help!”

If they get beat here, this would be humiliation. If they became unable to block students, Maroon would have to give up on his title of being a “steel wall”.

“Block them with your life!”

Earth, wind, and water. Maroon immediately summoned three intermediate-level beasts, and prepared himself for war.

“Just push through!”

Aris realized that the students reached the first floor as they chased the members of the school council.

She also realized that there were ten professors all geared up for war at the gates.

-Aris, we fell for their tricks!

At this moment, Athena managed to see through the tricks of the council.

[So... they really are doing that, huh?]

Aris, too, had realized what was going on, and decided to put a stop to their tricks.

“Everyone, hold o...”

There was just one problem. She spoke too slow.

“What in the world are you guys...”

Professor Maroon shouted out in rage, but no one was able to hear his words due to the ruckus that was going on.

“Help the president!”

“We’ll defeat the professors together!”

At this moment, every single student on the field had a question mark pop into their heads, but Nerkia acted before any of them could do anything.

“Lend me your strength, comrades! We must break through them today!”

“So... you really are helping them!”

The student body thought of a single thing as they saw professor Maroon emit a murderous aura towards them.

-We fell for it!

“They’re just professors! We can beat them easily!”

“There’s just ten of them! Get ‘em!”

Despite their thoughts, provocative words kept coming out of the student body. The members of the council who thought to have had retired had actually joined their ranks!

“Do I seem that easy to you?! Come at me, then!”

The earth split, and the wind howled. This was the first floor. It was the easiest place to fix, and therefor the best place to use magic.

“P, professor! Wait!”

Aris tried to stop the professor from attacking, but.

“It’s ok, Aris! You worked hard to gather the students here for us, we’ll take care of the rest!”

Aris became dazed as she saw Nerkia say this to her with complete seriousness. As she did this, several members of the student council that hid inside the student body began to charge.

“Right, come! Today, none of you leave the school!”

Aris came back to her senses with those words, but things were already too late by then.

“Shit... I’ll kill him!”

Aris shouted this as she watched Nerkia from the back with intense hatred.

“Just charge! We can’t get out of this mess otherwise!”

And on that day, the student council were able to go back to their dorms.

# Chapter 6. Hell Does Not End. (3)

---

“I trusted that you’d succeed. And you did.”

The student council experienced what one would call killing intent as they watched Naruan smile like a benevolent teacher in front of them.

‘Just who the hell is talking here...’

‘Just once. I want to hit him once. Just take his damn balls and crack!’

‘You trusted that we’d succeed? Don’t just trust us, let us go!’

But even this desire for murder melted away in an instant.

“Ehe, you have something to say?”

Once they took a look at the silver demon.

“So, why’d you call us?”

When Nerkia said this in a calm, composed manner, even Naruan became surprised.

‘So the Council President isn’t completely crazy after all.’



Naruan looked over the group as he thought this, and made a serious face.

“The school will participate in several events in the near future, starting from the empire’s festival, to the sports competition and the cultural competition.”

“We know.”

“And a while ago, the schools decided that we would hold all of these events in one day.”

“So that’s what ended up happening.”

Naruan nodded as if he had expected this. Normally, the sports competition began a few weeks after the festival, and the cultural competition would start a few months after the sports competition.

Since these were events hosted by the four biggest schools in the empire, many people attended, but due to the dates in which these events happen, there were lots of complaints about how spread apart these dates were. Using this, Naruan managed to persuade the other schools to host the competitions all in one day.

‘Honestly though, it’s because of the money...’

As mentioned before, the budget of the school was running low. Especially last time, when professor Maroon decided to go berserk on the first floor, the school actually came close to becoming bankrupt.

“And so, this brings us to one thing. I want to establish a deal with you.”

“What is it?”

“Win.”

Nerkia frowned. But this face instantly changed into that of glee when he heard Naruan’s next words.

“I’ll cut the time you have to stay after school by one hour per competition.”

“Does that mean you’ll get rid of the after school study time if we win everything?”

“Yeah, pretty much.”

At this time, Naruan saw something. He saw a battlefield littered with corpses and swords. He saw twenty monsters who stood on top of a tower of corpses, shouting the cry of victory over everyone!

‘...Nn? Isn’t that exaggerating things a bit?’

Naruan, who managed to see this illusion due to the energy these students were giving off in front of him, realized that perhaps a miracle would happen.

“We shall take their heads.”

‘Perhaps a miracle actually will happen.’

\*

It was an impossibility to win all three competitions.

There were schools that were traditionally strong in certain competitions. Mercaria was overbearing in the cultural competition, Marcis overtook everyone in the festival, and Arucia dominated in the sports competition.

The sports competition was usually won by Arucia, as the students there were all muscle-brains. And the second place goes to Yugrasia... well, that was what was supposed to happen, but the summoner’s school was being overtaken by Marcis for some strange reason.

Normally, one would think that wizards were frail little people who experimented all day long in their towers. After all, these were the people who crafted things like potions and experimented with alchemy.

Then how do they make potions, and how do they experiment?! They create magic formations!... is not what actually happens. In reality, they put in all the ingredients into a pot, and they stir it. They stir it good. They'd finish in 5 minutes if it was short, but this stirring process could take up to half a day.

Stir stir stir stir. This stirring was what characterized these beings called wizards! Plus, there was their staff as well! People often think staves would be pretty light, since it was made of wood, but wood actually weighs quite a bit. Not only that, the kind of wood that are used to make staves out of are even weightier than normal wood.

Expensive staves usually have formations on it that lighten the load, but those really are expensive. It seems like a lot of rich families would buy these staves, but that isn't the case at all. This is because a lot of wizards actually came from peasant families!

It was impossible to win against a noble knight who trained since a young age, but it was possible to overtake a noble wizard as a peasant to earn a huge amount of cash.

But of course, it was impossible for these peasant wizards to start earning right from the start. Because of this, these students train with cheap, heavy staves, and when they become high-class wizards, they don't bother getting a lighter staff since they already got used to the heavy weight.

Therefore, due to the fact that these student wizards train their

strength whether they like it or not, they become able to overtake students from Yugrasia.

And second, there was the festival. Many of the powerful individuals come to watch, and it is said that even the imperial family comes to enjoy the event as well. Because of this, all of the schools focus on making themselves look dazzling in front of these people.

They had to dazzle the imperial family, who saw amazing things almost daily! Because of this, Marcis usually took first place in these competitions, and... the second place unexpectedly went to Arucia.

One would think that Yugrasia would be able to take second place easily using their summons, but the summoner's school was never able to defeat Arucia's sword fights.

Arucia just showed several students fighting on a training field, but for some reason, this got people extremely excited. And the death matches the school hosted on the last day was quite a sight to see! It was said that even Marcis got almost shaken off their throne on a day like this.

The school would host a survival match using all the students in the school. This event where the students got teleported into the dark forest to fight showcased a fight more intense than any other. The winning student was even said to be scouted by the imperial knights.

And lastly, there was the cultural competition. This was a competition to show what the school was like better than any other. Mercaria took the top spot in this all the time. If it wasn't for the fact that Arucia was full of idiots, Yugrasia would've failed to even take the third place. This was because many people thought that they'd much rather take a look at Marcia instead of looking at Yugrasia.

Precisely because of this, Yugrasia always aimed to get second place in these competitions. They were satisfied with getting third place. After all, this was typical, and this was logical.

“Logic? Whuzzat?”

-Uoooooh!

But in the auditorium, these students responded like hungry wolves towards Nerkia's speech.

“These are just maggots that stay in school for 5-6 hours. Marcia? They just live and experiment in their school? It's like home there, isn't it? They just study for like two hours each day? And they live like they do now when they get into the magic towers? Mercaria? Studying for the longest time out of all the schools? Don't kid me. How many of them come to school during vacation? And. Arucia? Ha. Ha. Ha. Don't even get me started on those faggots in heaven. Now, I ask of you, comrades. How many idiots are there here who thinks that we can't win?”

-There are none!

-There aren't any idiots like that in the school!

-If there are, we'll kill them!

Nerkia listened to these shouts for a bit, then silenced the entire crowd just by saying "quiet".

"This is the proof I have right here. Nicerwin himself wrote it. If we win all three competitions, we can start going home at a normal time. Now, comrades. What is defeat to us?"

-It does not exist!

"What do we do to our enemies?"

-Perform the judgement of death upon them!

"What are those who had not even seen the silver demon yet?"

-Peasants who haven't even experienced death yet!

"And because of this!"

-Victory is on our side!

-Uoooooooooh!

Once again, cries like that of wolves came out. It was a cry that mostly came from the third years. But this cry of determination and confidence instilled a feeling of victory over the first, and the second years.

“Because of this, we will now start training for the rest of vacation. And this training will help us get to know our strengths and weaknesses better!”

There was no student who went against Nerkia’s announcement.



## Chapter 6. Hell Does Not End. (4)

---

“These crazy bastards!”

One of the professors began spitting out curse words. And these curse words were currently ringing throughout the entire school.

“A little bit more!”

“Harder! Harder!”

At the front, the entire student body was trying to advance through the defensive formations of the teachers.

“Call the ones in their classes as well! The entire school’s out here anyway!”

One of the professors said this as he fended off one of the third years away from him.

Right, this was the training Nerkia was talking about.

“We’re just fighting against students in the competitions, right?”

This was what Nerkia said after he said he’d train all the students.

“If that’s the case, we just need to win against teachers.”

Those words were the cause of this entire situation.

“This is the second floor! The place where the faculty room is located! If we lose here, we’d be admitting defeat! Call every one of the teachers on this floor! Tell Eron to get his ass over here with his damn broomstick or something as well!”

The oldest teacher in the school, professor Makira, shouted this, but it was too late to stop the students at this point.

“Morale is the most important thing for soldiers in a fight. Do not be afraid. Do not even think of losing! The enemy is simply more experienced than us, their summons are just like ours! Fight! Steal their skills, steal their experience, steal their everything! Think more than them, fight harder than them! This is the way of the weakling, and this is the only way for weaklings to fight the strong!”

The morale of the students rose due to Nerkia’s speech. Right! Even these seemingly powerful professors had days when they were like the students! The students could become like those professors as long as they were given time! Even though there were a lot of professors... this was doable!

“Uoooh!”

“Haaah!”

When the students managed to use their resources to their full potential, they began to push back the professors.

“Boss, we took over the most of the third year classrooms! The sixth floor’s almost done as well! The fifth floor’s at a stalemate because of Maroon, though.”

Nerkia nodded after listening to the message from his subordinate. Their greatest enemies, disregarding the unbeatable silver demon, consisted of four people. Professor Arhan and Maroon from the military, along with Professor Muam and Harian from the Summoner’s Association.

Professor Maroon and Arhan, along with their subordinate professors, were all pros that fought in countless wars. These were the people who managed to block the student body several times from escaping!

And professor Muam and Harian... the two never tried to stop the student body, but they were the truly dangerous enemies in this operation. The two were contracted to a Elemental king and a god!

Summons were usually unable to use their power fully. The stronger they were, the more their power got restricted. After all, it was impossible to exercise full strength in a different dimension. But it wasn’t like strong spirits weren’t strong. If a god of a different world, or a king of a different dimension was willing to lend strength to someone, they were still able to exert terrifying strength on the battlefield.

Because of this, the two never tried to stop the students from trying to escape. But their presence alone made them get marked as a part of the student body's greatest enemies.

‘That’s why we have to stop this before the two decides to make their move!’

The students made plans on how to deal with Maroon and Arhan already, but they had no idea how to deal with Muam and Harian as of yet.

“If Maroon’s on the fifth floor, Arhan would be on the first! Don’t think of going easy on the man! Let’s go!”

There was a time when the student council barely escaped with their lives after challenging Maroon’s troop with the entire student body. They had to use the student body as a bait to escape, too. But this time, their goal was to defeat Maroon. It was a feat much harder than what they had done before.

But!

“Maroon and Arhan are powerful enemies! They’re veterans who survived countless battles. But this means that, once we win against them, we’d be able to win the competitions! No matter how many of us falls, keep pushing! Step on your friends if that’s what it takes to win! Even those who fall would wish for our victory!”

-Ooohhhh!

“W, what the?! Are they mad?”

Despite being all talk and no action, Nerkia’s speech had a powerful effect on the students! The professors on the second floor slowly got pushed away, and actually managed to get to Arhan.

“Those are good eyes. They are the eyes of those who do not fear death.”

Arhan nodded as he observed the students quietly. If he actually manages to get back to the military after his current career as a professor, he might try employing this training method on the soldiers.

-...Master, I think the soldiers would initiate a coup if you did that.

“The will of the soldiers of the empire are not that weak.”

-...I don’t think the will of the students are that weak either?

“Students are different from soldiers.”

Arhan’s summon, the key, quickly tried to stop its master from sealing the fate of the future soldiers of the empire, but Arhan refused to listen to it. The key then began thinking of how to stop

its master, but its master blew away that thought with but a single word.

[Dragonscale armor.]

-...Master, are you crazy? You actually want to take that thing out when you aren't even going out to kill a dragon?!

The dragonscale armor. It was a sign of someone who killed a dragon, and it was something that was crafted out of the scares of a dragon.

It was the ultimate armor that could not be taken care of by a normal human. It was said that the only sword that was able to make a dent in the dragonscale armor was the dragonslayer, the sword that was said to have had been created by a dragon's teeth and bones.

There was only 200 times the key took out this armor from the imperial treasury. This seems like a lot, but when one considers the history of the empire, it was quite little in reality. In fact, Arhan himself had only used the armor about four times.

[They are worthy of seeing its use, don't you think?]

Arhan pride himself in the fact that he didn't act out as much as the other professors did. Normally, he was like a beast that roamed the battlefield. What would happen if the man went serious here?

-...Do what you want.

The key gave up on trying to stop him. Arhan wouldn't kill the students. No, the students probably should be able to take his attacks.

“Hahaha! Be proud, for I shall use... Nn?”

The moment Arhan tried to use his full power, he felt a small poke on his hip, and turned around.

“I want to play as well. May I?”

There was a boy who seemed to be about ten next to Arhan. But Arhan frowned when he saw the boy.

“To think you'd just take the tastiest bit, you're too much.”

“Hahaha, but haven't you played plenty till now? Let me enjoy myself as well.”

Arhan sighed lightly, and stepped back.

“Hah... annoying old man.”

“Haha, that's how it goes. You become more annoying the older you get.”

When the boy smiled at Arhan and stepped forward, the entire student body came to an abrupt halt.

“A kid?”

“...Who is it?”

When the first and the second years turned to look at Nerkia, the council president hesitantly answered the question.

“You wouldn’t know since he never really showed himself, but... this is professor Muam.”

“The contractor of the spirit king!”

“The master of water!”

“Isn’t he supposed to be over a hundred years old, though?!”

“He’s a hobbit. Has a baby face as well.”

“But this is still too much! Wait, since he’s a hobbit, isn’t he supposed to look like this?”

“Haha, you’re all making me embarrassed.”



Muam simply smiled wisely as he watched the confused students.

“He seems nice...”

“Cute, too...”

The students became hesitant after seeing Muam’s smile. Looking like a ten year old was a cheat!

“You idiots! Do you want to lose just because of his looks? Have you forgotten what our original goals were? And this person is... he’s someone hand-picked by Nicerwin himself!”

“Haha, dear king.”

Muam ignored Nerkia’s shouts, and began talking to the void.

“Dumbasses! There’s no way Nicerwin’s professor would be normal!”

The third years immediately got ready for battle. At the same time.

“Let us enjoy ourselves just a bit.”

The king of water descended unto the human world.

## Chapter 6. Hell Does Not End. (5)

---

I say this again, but in this world, a summoned beast loses a majority of their power when it gets summoned.

Even though this is the case, the power of the elemental king or a god is still immense.

This was the biggest reason why Muam and Harian decided not to participate in all the battles. After all, the damages they would cause would be astronomical.

But.

“We only want victory. Get as wild as you want, we just want a solid win.”

The two professors immediately jumped out of their seats and went out to fight. Just how much had they been ignored all this time?! Simply because of the fact that they were far too powerful, they had been unable to fight, and this caused the students to ignore them for the most part. And recently it felt like even the faculty was beginning to ignore them!

This feeling of theirs was part of the reason why they were both going all out in the first place.

“T, the hell?!”

Nerkia was, well, dying. Figuratively, of course.

Water, when it came to destructiveness, was the weakest out of the four elements.

It didn't have the violent strength of fire, nor did it have the sharpness that the wind possessed. It didn't contain the heaviness that innately lay within earth either.

But, if the elemental wielding water was of a king-class, the story was different!

The ability to control water pressure could make water even more violent than fire, even sharper than the wind, and even heavier than the earth. And!

“Are you trying to drown us all?!”

The water had begun flooding the room, and it had already reached the students' hips.

“Hohoho, you guys should be able to survive. About 11 minutes, I reckon?”

“Where in the world did you come up with that number?! How can humans even hold their breath for 11 minutes?!”

“Hoho, the fact that those people can exist is one of the greatest

wonders of this world.”

What professor Muam did after summoning the elemental king wasn't much. He just created water.

But, this water was enough to destroy all the earthen barriers and the towering walls of wind that the students had created all by itself.

“Um, professor, the nurse's office, the guest room, and the disciplinary officer's office are all in the first floor. The nurse's office and the guest room shouldn't have anyone right now, but the disciplinary officer...”

“Ah, that's fine. Professor Nicerwin already moved all the important documents and such to the library before all this.”

“That means...”

“Haha, that's right. He told me to go wild.”

“...Could it be, professor Harian as well?”

“That fellow went upstairs. Wanted to see the child who made a contract with Athena. After all, her summon is from the same neighborhood as the kid's.”

Bang!

As Muam finished speaking, a loud bang resounded from above. Both Muam and Harian were members of a group that was able to rival the elders of the Association, the Four Mad Elders! It was the group that the Association commonly referred to as the unstoppable monsters.

The peculiar thing about the Four Mad Elders was that, disregarding their peculiar personalities, they were all non-humans, and all of them seemed young and innocent.

In other words, this seemingly innocent hobbit right here was one of the craziest officials from the Summoner's Association. This was reason enough for the Association to send such a powerful summoner to a school like this.

“Um, in any case. We might be in danger as well.”

The water had already reached the necks of the faculty by this time. The shorter students should've drowned a long time ago, but thanks to the pedestals that Nerkia created, they were barely getting by.

“Isn't the school council president pretty good? Normally, making pedestals like this would raise the water level significantly, but to think the boy would hollow out the pedestals to let the water in. As I thought, the third years of this school are quite smart. Harian said that he wanted to teach the first years upstairs, but the experienced children are always funner to play with.”

Even Arhan felt a chill run down his spine as he watched professor Muam let out an evil laugh.

‘Well, he probably won’t kill them.’

The professors all thought this as they made the same pedestals as the ones that Nerkia made.

On the other hand.

“Hihihihi! As I thought, young’uns are the best!”

“D, damn it! Someone break that thing! Kya! Who, who touched my legs?”

Harian was looking at the students with a fond face, but the students themselves were all dying inside. The seemingly soft wind that Harian created had turned into an invisible wall, and this wall was currently driving all the students to the end of the corridor.

‘Kuh... T, the smell...’

‘So this is what a woman smells like!’

‘I... I like dis...’

Only the male students were benefiting from all this.

The struggle to get away had soon turned into a joyous struggle for the boys, and the girls, who realized this almost instinctively, tried to get away as if they were trying to run from a pile of bugs.

“You beasts, stop it!”

“You guys are all dead when we get out!”

“P, pervert! There’s a pervert here!”

When a deep voice suddenly came out screaming from a hoard of high-pitched voices, everyone turned to look at the source of it. One of the most popular male student in the second years was quickly turning pale as everyone stared at him.

“Ah, if it’s Rahk...”

“I’m jealous... I’m fine with a pervert, I just want girl near me...”

“Tch, what a bastard...”

All the male students looked at Rahk with jealous eyes, but Rahk simply turned paler as he shouted at the students.

“Who said it was... a girl? That pervert... is a guy!”

-!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

At this moment, a silent scream came out of all the male students as they all paled.

-Break the wall!

“Uoooh!”

Professor Harian looked at the boys pushing the wall back with brute force, and widened her eyes.

“Aren’t they cute? This is why I like children.”

-Well, if you say it while looking like that...

Harian, a half-elf, was already over a hundred years old. But in reality, she was still a developing girl. As a girl who looked to be 12 years old, saying something like that to people who looked far older than her was quite peculiar.

“I’m telling you, it’s better this way. If I looked like an old woman, I’d be marked as a pedophile, but like this, the children would instead be the ones to be marked as pedos.”

-Pedos, you say...



Aeolus, the god that Harian had formed a contract with, desperately wanted to annul his contract. He was happy to contract a half-elf who had a natural talent for the wind element at first, but his feelings had turned into that of regret after a long time.

To think his great power of the wind would just be used to annoy students like this! What in the world was this supposed to be?!

“Mn? Mr. Aeolus? We’re being pushed back? If I get beat by students, my reputation would take a big hit, you know?”

-Whatever.

“Hmph, you’ve become meaner. Did you get jealous because I pay more attention to the students now? Is that it?”

-...Can we just end this quick?

The soft wind immediately turned into a raging gale. The students began to get pushed back yet again!

“Geh! S, someone touched my butt!”

“M, me too!”

“Hyaaa! Help me!”

“Y, you demons!”

Screams began to come from the other side of the wall! Most of them were from the boys!

“Hahn, what a nice sound! Keep screaming!”

The sixth floor was filled with Harian’s witch-like laughter and the screams of the students.

# Chapter 6. Hell Does Not End. (6)

---

## 6.25 Their Story.

[1] Ria El Nermia

“We must beat Arucia and Mercaria and prove that Marcis is the best!”

Everyone quietly nodded at the council president’s words. And then...

“Why not Yugrasia?”

When one of the students asked this question, the council president answered it in an obvious tone.

“Because they are weak, Ria.”

Marcis was the school that had the least amount of segregation between nobles and commoners. It was a school that praised talent, and as most of the students came in at a young age, they all knew each other well. Thanks to this, the students here were able to collaborate well with each other.

Even so, these people treated me carefully. Perhaps it was because my grandfather was the leader of an entire wizard’s tower.

I would've been discomfited by something like this in the past, but things were different now.

My honourable teacher from the not-far-off-past told me this once.

“Those who honor you, fear you, and are cautious of you. Use them well. They will abandon you anyway once they find that what they found honourable or fearful in your character disappeared, so exploit them as much as you can while they still follow you.”

Right. They only treated me well because of my grandfather, as well as my family. If it wasn't for that, they'd ignore me completely. If so, I need to use them while I still can.

“But it looks like a lot changed for them this year?”

I sent out opposing words to the president immediately. Normally, it wouldn't look good for a new student to question a senior like this, but Marcis was different.

“Well, including Nicerwin, a bunch of famous teachers entered the school, but... it's impossible to change anything in just half a year. Only the third years pose a real threat to us.”

“...No, that might not be the case.”

It didn't even take a year, no, even a month till my worldview got

completely shattered after meeting my teacher.

And on that orientation day, I felt it. I felt fear from Nicerwin. My body instinctively told me that I mustn't go to Yugrasia.

“They already have three students with god-ranked beasts. One of them is contracted with Athena. The goddess of strategy and war. The other is contracted with the greatest trickster, Loki. As you know, the potential for Loki is immeasurable. Based on how one uses it, it's possible to bring out a demon that is as strong as my summon.”

“...Godly beasts are indeed very dangerous in group fights. No, even high-class elementals or summons are dangerous. But, we have powerful summons as well.”

Most summoners were wizards. As most of them used their summons in the front lines, and supported at the back, it was better for them to learn magic.

But, if taken in a different way, it could be said that most wizards knew a little bit of summoning magic! As it was far easier to summon a few weak summons instead of casting multiple spells, most wizards knew how to form a contract with a weak summon.

After all, even my teacher decided to make me contract Sutr as a wizard, not a summoner.

“But we can't win against them with just summoned beasts.”

“We don’t have to. We’re wizards.”

He was right. We were wizards, and therefor we were always above summoners. But... I still didn’t feel good about this.

“I still have a bad feeling about this.”

“...Instinct?”

“Yes, instinct.”

“Then... we may have to spy on them at some point.”

“We can do that?”

The president nodded. Spying was a normal task during vacations, and most schools usually showed off their skills the most during that point to intimidate the opponents.

We soon decided to visit Yugrasia with a few students who were interested in summoning magic.

And there, we saw.

“Uoooh!”

We saw a girl in holy armor, charging forward with a golden spear in hand. Behind her, we saw an army of summoned beasts, elementals, and students.

The scene almost seemed to be something that came straight out of a painting.

And, we saw.

“Kyakyakyakya! Come! Come!”

“Come on in, cuties!”

We saw a giant of water whose majesty left us breathless, and a noble god surrounded by the gentle wind. We also saw the little kids controlling them.

The girl’s spear was unable to pierce through the wall of wind, and got struck away by the wall of water. This was the same for the students behind her.

“Not yet! It’s not over yet!”

When one of the students stood back up saying this, the others stood up with him.

And after seeing this, one of our students whispered something that we agreed with one hundred per cent.

“...What the, scary...”

The students who constantly summoned their beasts to fight against the 10-year old children wielding gods.

In a situation like this, I could only think of one thing.

‘...Run!’

“Quick... Run!”

I ran out after saying this. The other students immediately began following behind.

My head was constantly shooting out warnings, and my instincts were telling me to run. And once I came back to the school, I told the president this.

“We’d be better off not touching Yugrasia.”

Unfortunately... my suggestion was denied.



## Chapter 6. Hell Does Not End. (7)

---

“Ho... hoho...”

Professor Harian thought as he supported his body with a giant staff.

‘To think I’d be like this even after taking out Yggdrasil’s staff...’

The staff that was said to be made from the world tree, Yggdrasil. The cases where he lost even with this staff could be counted in just one hand. After all, not only was she a god-level summoner, she was also a half-elf descended from high elves.

She possessed more talent in summoning than anyone else, and she used that talent well. Because of that, she was able to summon a god, and was able to get where she was now even with that strange personality of hers. But.

“You’ve worked hard.”

Nerkia said this as he fixed his red hair. Behind him were warriors who were letting out an unimaginable amount of fighting aura.

“Right... we lost.”

On one side of the room was professor Maroon and Arhan, and

professor Muam was roaming the room unconsciously on his blob of water. Professor Harian had to admit defeat after seeing this.

The day before vacation ended, they lost.

“Amazing.”

“...We just overcame death, that’s all.”

“...You probably wouldn’t have been able to do it if I went all out?”

“So you weren’t going all out at the end?”

“Ha... hahah, right, right! I was serious by the end. After all, I haven’t taken this staff out for battle in two decades. I thought I might’ve gone too far, but to think that you’d live. How amazing.”

She nodded vigorously with a giant grin on her face. Right, this wasn’t the case in the beginning, but starting last week, the group of professors began to feel a little pressured. And today, they were forced to go all out.

“How did you... manage to get that strong?”

She asked this while desperately fighting off sleep. She wanted to get unconscious like the others as well, but she needed an answer before that.

“At first... it was because of getting rid of after school study time. But the reason for fighting soon changed. Our juniors fought in front of us, and made a path for us. Once we emptied our minds, got rid of our goal, and strove for victory... we were able to become who we are now.”

“Freedom from all thoughts and ideas? Haha, what’s this, you already became that strong?”

When she began to fall down, a student quickly grabbed her.

“Haha... what the, getting hugged by a younger man is.. awe... some...”

“She never changes, does she.”

“Well, that’s what makes her so... er, never mind, there’s nothing really good about her.”

“Well... even so, it was a fun fight.”

The students said this as they watched the sleeping teachers.

And! For the first time in two months, no, for the first time since Naruan came in this school! They opened the front gate in their own power!

“Comrades, help out those who cannot move by themselves. But let them walk. Let them walk out with their own power!”

Nerkia shouted this at the front gates as he looked behind himself.

“Watch, feel, and walk! This is the path we’ve paved for ourselves!”

-Uoooooh!

Nerkia turned back to the front gates, and shouted.

“This is... our victory!”

---

“This is... our victory!”

“They became really strange, master.”

“Yeah....”

Naruan, who was looking at the students from the library, nodded in agreement.

“But why didn’t you send me out? My body’s begging to fight!”

“I feel like they’d lose all sense of hope if you go out?”

“Hnng... being too strong is a sin as well... in any case, what will you do with them now? I don’t think you’d be able to control them.”

“I’ll just try to persuade them a bit, and if that doesn’t work, you’ll have to go.”

“Hahn, to think you’d send a young girl like me to fight those people... you’re mean.”

“Saying that with an expectant face kind of makes you very unconvincing, you know?”

Naruan sighed as he watched Arcadia.

“So we just have a month left, huh.”

School would start again the next day. Normally, schools would prepare for the Empire’s festival after vacation, but since all three events were taking place at once, they’d probably use all that time teaching.

“No, there’s nothing more to teach them, is there?”

Naruan wondered if he should change his plan, as the students

grew much faster than he had expected, but gave up on it.

“Well, all will be settled in ten days.”

This event, which would start with the festival, would continue onto the sports competition, then the cultural fest. The first event would take up four days, the second would take up one, and the last event would take up three days. Each event had a single rest day in between each other, meaning that a total of ten days would be spent.

The empire’s festival would be handled by the empire itself, and the sports competition, along with the cultural festival, would be handled by the schools.

“Well, winning the cultural festival is pretty much in the bag, at least.”

Naruan was sure of having Yugrasia win in the cultural festival. No matter how strong Arcia was, Yugrasia was sure to win. After all, they had prepared something entirely new!

“Victory... is ours.”

# Chapter 6. Hell Does Not End. (8)

---

6.25 Their Story.

[2] Some people's agreement.

“Is this the real map?”

“Well, have you ever seen us lie to you?”

The woman who was looking over the map grinned.

“Impressive. You made a map this big in such a short time.”

“It wasn't that short a time, but it did take up quite a lot of cash. Mm... Honestly, this is a little too big of a request for just a single person. That guy doesn't have limits on money, after all. Safety is best, he says.”

“Hm, he did save my life a few times thanks to that.”

“...Those eyes aren't that of a person who got saved by someone?”

The small man looked up at the woman suspiciously, and gulped down the tea in front of him in one breath.

“The man’s the saviour of our town. This might be a fair trade, but if you harm him even a little bit, you’d be making an enemy out of our entire species.”

“Ahh, I have no intentions of doing anything like that. It’s just... he saved my life, so now he has to take responsibility?”

“...What?”

“In other words... take responsibility for taking away a girl’s heart?”

“...That just makes it all the more confusing.”

“Just think of it as me taking good care of him.”

“...That man won’t be willing to be ‘taken care of’.”

“That’s what makes this all the more fun.”

The man sighed.

“Hah... I’m not sure if I’m even doing a good thing here.”

“He’s going to be happy, and I’m going to be happy. And my subordinates in the continent are going to be happy as well. Everyone’s going to be happy, so don’t try to delve into this all too



much.”

“...I don’t understand why he’s trying to run like no tomorrow from you.”

“Mm... he’s shy?”

This time, the man made a truly dumbfounded face. That face soon changed into something of mock admiration.

“Well, looks like you wouldn’t listen no matter what I say. Send the money to our town.”

“Alright. You don’t have to worry about that. I’ll send the Mistein to the town as promised. I’ll send other precious metals in the future.”

“And in turn, we’ll provide you with weapons and armor. As you know, us dwarves don’t go back on our promise.”

The man’s height didn’t change much, even when he stood up. But the densely-packed muscles on his body despite the height seemed to prove that he indeed was a dwarf.

“The man is a VIP. Treat him well.”

“Understood.”

When she said this, a man whose black clothes seemed to scream “I’m an assassin!” appeared, and disappeared.

“Hmm~ to think he’d be so close to me. Ah, I must’ve been an idiot. I forgot he was like that.”

She gripped her pen so that she could start writing letters to her subordinates abroad trying to find him, then turned to the map again.

“Right... he’s really close. Well... this time, I’ll spend some time on this. It’d be wasteful if I lose him again?”

After trembling in pleasure for a second, the woman made a demonic smile on her face.

“Checkmate.”

# Chapter 6. Hell Does Not End. (9)

---

“Finally, the festival has come.”

In Yugrasia’s main auditorium, the students of the school were looking at Nerkia with predatory eyes.

“All the professors of the school agreed not to make any boring speeches. The reason? It’s simple. We believe that you will win. They are all preparing to make celebratory speeches right now. I am the same. There is nothing else to say other than this. We are strong. This is obvious. But even so, I ask you this. Does anyone wish to say something before we leave?”

-.....

“Good. Let us leave.”

Yugrasia moved quietly as one, just like a single organism. There was no need to stir them up with speeches like other schools did.

“...Amazing.”

Duke Zeaire, the overseer of the entire event, managed to see this scene before anyone else. He trembled in shock when he saw this scene.

“So this is... Yugrasia. Aren’t they like that because they lost all

hope?”

One of Zeaire’s subordinates asked this.

Many people remembered winners. Yugrasia, who always took last place, did not exist in anyone’s memory. Because of this, not many had hopes for this school.

“Can’t you feel it?”

“Feel what?”

“Ehei... I have told you this so much, too... You’ve heard of the idiom [wujibifan](#), yes?”

“Doesn’t it mean that when things reach their extremes, they begin moving backwards?”

“Correct. They also say this: beware the silence. The more silent something is, the bigger the event is going to be. The reason why the enemy isn’t moving is because they are organizing themselves. By moving only a single step, they are able to take ten steps forward.”

“...So that means...”

“Right. It’s hard to pull back a taut bowstring, but once you manage to pull it back, you can get the arrow to travel extremely

far. These fellows always took third place. You said that they cannot be remembered by others? That makes it so that they have nothing to lose.”

“So you believe that they’d be the ones to lead this event?”

Zeaire didn’t respond to his subordinate’s question, and instead looked over the students take their place in the main hall. As he did this, his eyes met with that of a student’s.

In an instant, the duke was overtaken with a feeling of despair.

‘I.. I’m getting a feeling like this from a mere student?!’

To think a student would be able to instill a feeling like this to one of the two columns of the empire!

“...It might be possible.”

The heart of duke Zeaire’s began to beat intensely.

“...Who’s that?”

Nerkia saw a middle-aged man look at him above, and glared in response.

‘Probably some high-ranking official.’

In other words, an enemy. One of the reasons why Yugrasia always lost was because not many of the government officials that directed the event weren't from their school! Because of this, Yugrasia always had a bad start in their competitions.

But there was something Nerkia did not know, and that was the fact that the duke got involved to ensure fairness in the competition! Not even the nobles or the emperor himself could change the tides of the competition in front of the duke.

Nerkia, without knowing this, glared at the duke with extreme hatred. As he did so, one of the students spoke to him.

“Pres, it's Marcis.”

“...They're here!”

Marcis, among the three other schools, was the greatest enemy of Yugrasia. As summoning magic was very similar to normal magic, the two schools could have become the greatest of friends if they were given the chance. But the situation right now turned them into the worst rivals. Of course, Marcis was always better than them in every regard.

“Hmph.”

“Annoying bastards...”

Nerkia ground his teeth as he saw Martan pass by with a smirk. He had managed to see the previous year's council lose brutally in the war between Marcis and Yugrasia. He even managed to take part in the battle just a little bit!

But! But!

‘This time, things had changed!’

Times had changed. This time, the students put down everything they had on the line. These students were no longer powered by the motivation to get rid of the after school study time, but by the desire for victory alone.

“Now, we shall begin the empire's festival, along with the cultural and sports competitions. As an opening speech...”

Nerkia could no longer hear the speaker's voice. He was reviewing the strategies they were to execute in their battles.

‘We will... not lose!’

Nerkia quietly lit a fire in his heart.

---

6.25 Their Story.

[3] The darkness of the empire

The empire was something whose size could not be found anywhere else in history.

No empire in the past was this powerful as the one that existed now.

But once one takes a look into this empire's past, a history of blood unfolds. One would realize that the empire that existed now could only exist under the sacrifice of countless heroes in battle.

Due to this, there were still many people in the empire who wished to rebel, and because of this, the festival became something that these people had to destroy.

“The festival this time is the largest one they ever had in history. This is because they're working in collaboration with the four schools this time.”

“Because of this, we believe that it is time for us to go all out as well.”

The men in black in the dark meeting room opened their mouths.

“Plus, the festival this time is administrated by that damned duke.”

“It would be good to kill him, and mess up the festival at the



same time.”

“But duke Zeaire will be a hard target to kill.”

The duke’s family had a lineage of war heroes. They were the ones who managed to take over land the size of two small nations! In other words, they were a target harder to take down than the emperor himself.

“Let’s work with the students first.”

These people worked in the shadows of the empire. They fought the empire constantly. But the thing is.

“This time, we will finally attain our first victory!”

They never did anything correctly!

“Several agents from the empire began to move into other nations. And, one of our greatest enemies was taken down as well! Adding to that, a chance like this comes! We can’t let this fail!”

“But this might actually be a trap?”

“The emperor surely isn’t this dumb.”

“He is the one who took out more evil organizations than anyone

else in history, after all.”

The group was split in two, and began to discuss the situation passionately.

“Silence.”

After a moment of arguing and insulting, a man who was sitting at the middle of all this opened his mouth. Once he did so, everyone turned to look at him.

“It is fine if it is a trap. A chance like this won’t appear again.”

Everyone heard his words. And no one opposed it.

# **Chapter 7 - We Came, We Saw, We Won**

# Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (1)

---

The event of the festival was simple.

Each school would gather in a designated area, and ten minutes before the event starts, these schools would get a notice of what event they would be participating in. Each school would choose their players, and these players would enter the gate to the fighting grounds.

It is impossible to make them fight in a circular stage in the middle of a colloseum! This is because there had been a massive disaster caused by this in the past. Because of this, the audience gets to see the fight through recording magic, and the students would fight in a different place.

And, that place is.

“The labyrinth?”

“It’s a game to get to the end of the labyrinth by defeating monsters and traps. The difficulty of these monsters and traps aren’t high, but the labyrinth itself is quite complicated.”

Nerkia immediately responded to Naruan’s question. This was a competition that took place a few times in the past. Because of the labyrinth, this particular competition took quite a long time to complete.

“There is a way to end the competition quickly.”

“What is it?”

“It might be dangerous.”

“That doesn’t matter.”

Naruan smiled when he saw Nerkia’s emotionless face.

“This tactic suits us best.”

Martan, the student council president of Marcis, was confident of victory. It was indeed true that the probability of Marcis’ victory here was extremely high. Unless a monster of a student appeared in either Mercaria and Arucia came out, this would end in a victory for Marcis.

“And since they forbade people from breaking walls, Arucia’s stupid tactic won’t work anymore!”

Due to the fact that one of the participants from Arucia broke all the walls of the labyrinth in the previous competition, damaging the walls became off-limits. In other words, Arucia wasn’t able to show off all their power, and Mercaria.... well, there was no need to worry about them, as they were all peasants at best. Yugrasia’s summoned beasts weren’t able to do much in this competition, either!

There were people who thought similar to him in this competition.

“Victory is ours!”

Ruan, the student council president of Arucia, was confident that the victory would go to them in this competition. Stamina was what mattered most in a labyrinth like this! As long as they ran like hell, they’d eventually get to the end! Neither Marcis nor Mercaria would be able to stop them!

And.

“We will come out victorious!”

Axis, the student council president of Mercaria, was thinking the same thing as all the other student council presidents.

The students with the best memorization capabilities of the school were gathered! As long as they avoided enemies, they should be able to make a map of the labyrinth! The idiots at Arucia and the wizards of Marcia wouldn’t be able to stop them!

And...

“This time, we shall be victorious!”

This should be coming from Nerkia, the student council president of Yugrasia, but it was actually coming from a man in black clothes. In other words, a suspicious person.

“This time, we will succeed in beating the empire.”

This event was to be broadcasted throughout the entire empire! This was a perfect chance to show how powerless the empire was! Already, thirty people had snuck into the battlegrounds, and as long as the empire didn't notice them, victory was theirs. No matter how strong these students were, these people were full-grown soldiers!

And lastly.

In a dark tavern, there were a few people who were watching the battle through a small broadcasting orb. What was this place? The biggest gambling hall of the empire! A little girl appeared in this dark place.

“Aah, this isn't a place for a child like you.”

“Haha, a child? You mean little lady. Hey, do you want to have a drink with me?”

“Mister, you'll be having a nice time with the popo if you did that. What was the phone number for the police again...”

After passing by the drunkards, the girl walked towards the

master of the tavern.

“Hey kid, this isn’t...”

Clack!

Before the master even managed to say anything, the girl took out a huge pouch onto the table.

“Hah, since when did this place care about age? You kiddin’ me?”

“What do you...”

Before the master even got to say anything, the girl flipped the leather pouch to spill its contents onto the table.

Clink clink clink...

“H... holy...”

“Is, is this all gold?”

When the men around her said this out of shock, the girl simply smiled in response.

“3000 gold on Yugrasia.”



The odds were stacked against Yugrasia, and no gambler was willing to bet on its victory. Only the silver-haired girl, and her owner were the ones certain of its victory.

## Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (2)

---

“In just a moment, the first battle between the four schools will begin. I am the narrator for this particular competition, Mara. Next to me is the Empire’s government official Mata, along with knight Martin.”

“Yes, I am Mata.”

“Martin.”

The two of them both seemed to not care about the competition at all, hence the reason why the empire decided to invite Mara, the professional MC.

“Haha, our names are pretty similar, but please don’t get confused! Then now, who do you think is the top candidate to win in this competition?”

When Mara quickly asked the two a question to loosen up the mood, the two people spoke in conjunction with each other.

“Arucia.”

“Mercaria, of course.”

The former was said by Martin, and the latter by Mata. Of course, these two were graduates of the two schools they just mentioned!

“Yes, yes... an expected answer. In any case, I’ll now introduce the competition today to the audience. Due to security concerns, I just received the contents of this competition in this paper bag. Now, let’s take a look at what they hid in this thing...”

Mara opened the paper inside the bag.

“Right, this is one of the classic competitions that’s been seen multiple times already! It’s the labyrinth maze competition, that tests the battle capabilities and strategic capabilities of the students. To think they’d use ‘labyrinth’ and ‘maze’ together in a single title... well, despite the boring title, it is indeed a competition that shows much of what the students are capable of. Due to the fact that this is the twentieth competition of the festival, several new rules has been set in place. Flying is now forbidden, due to the fact that on the third competition a flying student from Marcis was put on the verge of death after being sniped by the other three school. Digging tunnels is forbidden, as several students awakened a drake by accident during the twelfth competition. And recently, due to Sir Ryan winning by cutting down all the walls in the competition, that has become forbidden as well.”

The attention of the audience got directed to Mara, thanks to his pro MC skills.

“Right, this competition is simple. Each school will send eight students to a labyrinth somewhere through a gate. After getting there, the students simply need to use whatever method possible to

escape! The three students who gets out first receives the points. As these points contain both student points and school points, it would be good for three students of the same school to go through at once. But the student points might turn those of the same school into potential enemies! Even best friends might betray each other over points! In other words, this is a friendship destroying game that will not disappoint!”

The entire capital was filled with shouts of excitement. Mara, hearing this, became proud of his job as an MC, and shouted out with pride.

“Now, let us watch the best competition of our lifetime!”

And so, the competition began.

And.

“...What in the world?!”

After three minutes, it ended.

With Yugrasia as the victor.

4 minutes ago.

“Victory is!”

“Arucia’s!”

“Uoooooh!”

Right before getting on the warpgate, student council president Ruan, along with the students of Arucia, huddled up together to get the team’s spirits up.

“Now, then!”

“We’ll be back... with victory!”

“Don’t you worry about us!”

“This big bro will come back after a total victory.”

Each one of them entered the gate with a large smile on their faces.

“The first place is mine, though!”

The student points were there in order to pick out the best student in the empire’s festival. Therefore, it was a given that these points would be what sets up the foundation for Ruan’s future. Arucia’s victory came first, but Ruan needed to take points for himself afterwards.

After thinking this, Ruan began to run immediately after the competition started with all his strength.

And as he did so.

“Woah!”

“There’s one!”

It was a student from Yugrasia! Behind the student was a wall, and he would not be able to dodge Ruan’s sword!

“Hah!”

Killing the opponent was forbidden! Because of this, he would have to use the back of his sword...

Swoosh

“Eh?”

‘I couldn’t hit him?’

He was a knight student. There was no reason why he couldn’t deal with a single summoner.

‘Luck?’

“This time, for sure!”

He swung once again. This time, his sword was twice as fast! There was a chance of getting the boy hurt, but that risk came with every competition.

‘This time for sure!’

Swoosh!

The sword struck empty air like before.

“W, what the!”

“Ah, god damn it. It is a little fast, but.”

When Ruan looked at his own sword dumbly as he shouted to himself, the student from Yugrasia frowned lightly.

“Magic arrow, red.”

A spell was cast from the student’s right hand!

‘An attack?!’

Ruan had managed to get away from the attack’s expected trajectory, but the arrows flew up to the skies instead. And at the moment the eight arrows reached their peak,

“Explode.”

The walls began to get destroyed.

“W, what? Destroying walls is against th...”

Destroying the walls were against the rules. But right then, a question appeared in Ruan’s mind.

‘Where did he come from?’

Right. That man came from a blocked path. Behind him was a wall.



“Could it be?!”

Ruan realized something at this moment, but he was unable to continue, due to having something enormous come their way.

With that, the competition ended.

# Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (3)

---

Let's scroll back in time by four minutes.

“Now, let us watch the best competition of our lifetime!”

The screen split into many once Mara said this. This would allow the audience to observe the battle from the four different school's perspectives all at once. And then, the sky above the labyrinth lit up with a bang, signalling the start of the competition.

“Right, it has finally begun. As expected, the students of Arucia are running.... The students of Mercaria are sending out tiny little spells into the air. It seems to be almost invisible to the eye... perhaps it's a coded message of sorts? The students of Marcia all sat down, and have begun talking amongst themselves. And the students of Yugrasia... They're summoning right from the start! Right, five of the students summoned water and earth elementals!”

“Summoning this early is bad in the long run.”

“Agreed. It's not a very good strategy.”

Both Martin and Mata expressed their disapproval. But the students who summoned their elementals weren't done yet!

“What... what are they doing?”

“They’re... making water?”

“Making water like that is very inefficient.”

The five students all began to condense water into a single spot.

“Making water using an elemental may be simple, but compressing it that much... their speed is very fast, too.”

“The battle hasn’t even started yet...”

The students began to step backwards. And once they stepped back far enough.

“Ah! It’s a wall! They made walls with elementals!”

“That seems to be a... dam?”

“C, could it be?!”

Just a minute had passed so far. In this time, five dams had been completed. And by using the earth elementals, the students quickly expanded their area filled with water.

Naruan’s strategy was simple.

“It may be a labyrinth, but in the end it only has one entrance.

Everything else is just a wall. So then. If we fill up the labyrinth to the brink with water, the water would naturally flow to the exit. And if we make the water move almost explosively, we should be able to take care of our enemies as well.”

And these dams were, when the students finally ran out of stamina, and when an unfortunate student encountered Ruan from Arucia, was destroyed, which let out all the water in an instant.

“Huoeeee?!”

Ruan tried to resist the water that was coming towards him, but got swept away. This was the same for the other students.

“Holy crap, what the?!”

A giant tsunami occurred in front of the eyes of the students of Mercaria.

“I, ice! I, it’s not working!”

“Kek?!”

One of the students from Marcis tried to use an ice magic from reflex, but she couldn’t stop the water. In fact, the ice broke off to little chunks that just ended up injuring teammates.

“Kueeee?!”

Not even the monsters in the labyrinth were able to resist the tsunami.

And lastly.

“W, what the crap is this?!”

“Wa, wait! Don’t get agitated! This is just the emperor’s trap! There’s no way a tsunami would occur here! This is just an illusion?!”

Even the members of the rebellion got swept away.

“Y.. hurgh... you crazy... ugh! Bastards!”

“Huhahaha, this is our victory!”

“C, crazy! Y.. puha! You’re crazy!”

Ruan shouted this at the Yugrasia student that got swept away with him at the start, but the other side simply decided to make more water till his face became absolutely pale.

“Y, you... is this suicide? You’ve resorted to suicide after realizing that you couldn’t win?! Puhe!”

“Who said anything about suicide?”

Something passed by Ruan’s head at this time.

“S, shark?”

“Bye~!”

A girl passed by Ruan whilst riding a shark.

“Ahh, the three students of Yugrasia are quickly reaching the exit! To think they’d quickly move across the water with their summons, truly amazing!”

A scene of three students moving on a shark, a penguin, and a fish was quickly broadcast to the rest of the empire.

“If things continue like this, Yugrasia would achieve complete victory! The students of Mercaria have been annihilated! Several students of Marcis are trying to resist with magic, but are failing! Ah, one of the students of Arucia went on top of the walls, but this is against the rules, and therefor he is out! Ah, I think he did this on purpose, actually.”

Mara raised his voice as he narrated the situations of the rest of the schools.

“Mm? What’s that?”

“Who the hell is this assassin dude?”

“Is he a judge?”

Even the men in black were broadcast to the empire.

“Ah... the water is getting drained through the exit. And right as I say this, one student from Yugrasia passes through! It looks like the other two will be coming soon as well.”

“Students often fight amongst each other for the most points by the end, but this doesn’t seem to be the case for Yugrasia.”

“To think they’d keep creating water till they fainted... no, their elementals are still creating water. How scary.”

Mata and Martin stared at the screen with uncomfortable faces.

“Mm? This is...”

A judge of the competition that was located at the exit began to fish out several men in black along with students.

“Mm... these aren’t judges... Hm?”

The knight, as he searched through the man's belongings, found a familiar mark and called over his partners to tie the men up.

“They're members of the rebellion. Lock them up for now!”

With this, the competition that shattered everyone's wild fantasies ended.



## Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (4)

---

“This... this doesn’t make sense!”

This was what was said in all the schools after the first day of the competition.

There were a total of five competitions that were held on the first day. The scores that came out after all these competitions was something that shocked everyone.

Yugrasia 630p

Arucia 160p

Marcis 130p

Mercaria 30p

Tyrannical. This was the only way you could describe the situation. Even after adding up the scores of all the other schools, the total score still didn’t match up to Yugrasia’s. The competition’s grading scale was exceedingly simple. First place gets a hundred points, second place gets sixty points, and third place gets thirty points. It gives all the points to the first three students. But because of this, the difference in scores between each school wasn’t that big.

The competitions involved from four to twenty four people at a time. In these competitions there lied aces who showed extreme

power against their opponents, and the other students often acted as the supports for aces.

But Yugrasia was different.

The first difference was this: they had no regard for their own damage.

“Die!”

On the second competition, capture the flag, Yugrasia decided to bury two of their own people in a mudslide along with six enemies.

The second difference: they had no aces.

“Hahaha, you just activated my trap!”

Bang!

The fourth competition. This was a boat race where students had to insert power into their boats in order to get across the finish line. And when Arucia and Marcis charged the water elemental summoner, thinking that the person would be an ace, the summoner just decided to kamikaze in their faces.

“T, that one’s a fake! He must be the real deal!”

When one of the Arucia students said this after seeing a Yugrasia student pass by, everyone chased him. But.

“It’s a fake again!”

Bang!

With this, Arucia and Marcis lost another 7 students. This repeated several times, until Mercaria, the ones who gave up fighting, ended up taking third place!

And most importantly of all, their stamina was inhumane!

“How... how can you move?!”

One of the Arucia students looked at a Yugrasia student with fear and shock. The student was soaked with blood and was covered with wounds. The Yugrasia student should’ve fainted already.

“Haha... you want to know why I can move? Well, I can move because I can!”

-Kuooooooooo!

A gorilla summon roared behind its summoner. And on the last competition, at the 1v1 coliseum tournament.

It was a competition where Mercaria students resigned early on for their survival, and a competition where Arucia students excelled best. After all, one could attack before anyone cast anything!

Everyone had bet on Arucia winning because of this, but the students of Yugrasia did not fall.

“U, uaaaah!”

An Arucia student gathered power into his sword as he screamed.

Chunk!

The gorilla’s arm got cut off, which made it become unsummoned as a result. The Arucia student put in a hit into the Yugrasia student’s stomach with the intention to win, but!

“C, cough... he, hehehe... huhahahaha! Is this all you got?!”

“W, what the hell?”

It was a powerful blow. The Yugrasia student was flown away and hit the floor multiple times, but still managed to stand up with a mad grin.

“D, don’t come here!”

The Arucia student stumbled out of the arena out of fear, and lost.

Although Yugrasia only managed to rack up 60 points, they still managed to instill a primal fear unto their enemies.

And.

“...All captured?”

In the rebel base of operations, the higher-ups could only stay silent.

“Everyone got swept away in the first competition thanks to the water from Yugrasia. In the second competition, they got swept away by the mudslide. Just like the first and second competitions, in the third...”

“Stop!”

The leader of the rebels shouted this to his subordinate reading the report.

“I already read the report! Our subordinates got swept up by Yugrasia’s tornado in the third competition, and on the fourth competition, they all fainted due to Yugrasia’s suicide attacks! But that’s not what’s important here. Failure doesn’t matter. We are weaker than the empire. This is why we always lost. But this is different! Why, why are we constantly getting beat up by

Yugrasia?!”

Everyone in the room shut their mouths when they saw their leader rage like this.

“Maybe it’s the empire?”

All eyes went to the person who just spoke.

“It’s weird that Yugrasia’s always the one that’s involved. Plus, there’s the intensive training they’ve been going through since the beginning of the year... perhaps this happened because the empire knew of our plans...”

“Knowing the emperor, you may be correct.”

The leader whispered this under his breath, but no one heard him.

“Right, if it’s the emperor, this is entirely possible. After all, he always managed to beat us at every turn. But, but, to think he’d use students... does he look down on us that much?”

The leader closed his eyes, muttered a few things, then stood up.

“I’ll show him, then. I’ll show him our true power! Get the information department on Yugrasia immediately. We’re moving out. Once we attain enough info, we will attack!”

-Understood!

With this, the rebellion's greatest operation yet began.

## Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (5)

---

“We won.”

“I see.”

“I, is that s... hah...”

The teachers in the room all let out tears of joy as they listened.

“We trained them ourselves, after all.”

“Right right. We touched them up reaaaal good, after all.”

Muam and Harian completely ignored the principal, and said this.

“We got beat by them. It would be nonsensical if they got beat by other schools.”

“Well, there are multiple ways of suicide, after all.”

Most of the professors who were tasked with fighting the students nodded. If the students lost even after defeating the teachers, the teachers would become the ones at fault. If a swordsman who beat so and so got beat by someone else, that someone else would automatically be stronger than the ones the swordsman beat! Having the students that beat them lose would



place a huge crack in their pride.

Because of this.

“If they lose, we’ll definitely have to go all out.”

The teachers nodded after hearing Naruan’s words. Because they were students, the professors still went easy on them. They all hid their ultimate skills, and fought the students with normal attacks.

“In any case, we’d be all set for winning as long as we get a few more points.”

“But none of the other schools would be willing to let something like this happen.”

This festival was something that put the pride of the four schools at stake. Most of the times, the difference in scores between first place and second place were very close. But in a situation like this, it was very likely that other schools would form an alliance against Yugrasia.

“No, if it’s like this, we’re definitely going to end up fighting an alliance. After all, all the other schools would go to shit if they lost like this.”

“Things would get pretty hard tomorrow...?”

Everyone went silent after professor Arhan said this.

“Ueeeh... to think we’d win!”

Other than the principal, that is.

“Well... we’d have to trust the students.”

Everyone nodded after hearing my words.

-You said yourself that you always get backstabbed by the ones you trust by the end, though?

...Just shut up.

At this time, I didn’t realize. My luck was the worst of the worst, and as long as the word “backstab” appeared, that the situation would definitely end up happening.

And the next day,

[...I’m sorry, everyone.]

Crap, the council president just got kidnapped.

## Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (6)

---

The siege battle this afternoon was simple, but it allowed the schools to be able to rack in a huge number of points. Even though we managed to take most of the points in the competitions earlier in the day, this one competition could potentially flip the entire situation for us. Each base that got conquered would allow a school to receive 200 points, and once a school took over the main base of a different school, they'd receive 500 points. This was the one battle that allowed a losing school to be able to take first place.

The competition was a little similar to “capture the flag”, but the scale of it was different.

Almost all the students participated, and there were up to twenty bases in the entire field, along with ten more empty ones. Each school starts with a hundred thousand points, and schools could use defensive/offensive tools they made themselves in the battle.

But since the schools' given points do not rise, and since it cost more points to operate more bases, it became hard for each side to just take over empty bases.

Because of this.

“Yugrasia's doing something strange yet again!”

The goal is to take over all the bases! That was the conclusion I

reached.

There was but one answer to a competition like this. The other schools would all ally together to strike us hard.

“If they’re going to do that anyway, then we should take over as much bases as possible before that.”

I didn’t get any objections. If we’re gonna go down anyway, we might as well try to fight back with numbers.

No matter what, it was almost always better to fight from inside a castle rather than outside. You could just throw away the base if things got bad as well.

“Problem is, we have too many enemies...”

There were just too many. Way too many. Everyone outside this school were enemies. Since the points our school racked in were outstandingly huge, the other schools basically decided to make us retire before things got even worse.

“Didn’t think they’d use their trump card so early on as well.”

The audience were much more heated than they were before.

In the battlefield, there was a burning hellhole that used to be a base, along with a flame giant in the center.

Due to the girl who was sitting on this giant's shoulder, an entire base just got taken out in an instant.

Even if they didn't expend any points on defensive tools, the base was still fortified with pretty powerful summoners. But still, the base couldn't last that long against Sutr himself.

‘Should’ve brought her here...’

I should’ve taken her when I could, but I was too late. There was no way to stop that thing. Aris seemed to have realized that as well, and decided to retreat.

And Arucia just so happened to reveal their trump card as well.

-Master, master! I think I might get along with that thing pretty well! I can feel it!

I felt a chill run down my spine from Arcadia's words, and rubbed by arms.

“Is it that much of a pervert?”

-Hah, hng! T, this feeling! Arucia's the best!

The students in the battlefield were all scared witless. They weren't scared of the absolute power that Sutr showed, but rather

the perverted insanity that Arucia's trump card showed.

-A, attack harder!

-Why?! Why is it liking my attacks?!

-N, nooooo! Don't come here!!

Arucia's ultimate weapon, Masokasia di Romia. This thing could be described in two simple words: roach, and masochist.

It had a life force akin to a cockroach, and was an M to boot. The thing just gets happier the more it gets hit. Doesn't die, though. The pervertedness of the thing just made everyone on the field lose their will to fight.

And lastly.

"It's time to act."

-Eh? Forreal?

I could see a student of Mercaria bribe students into his side. Right, let's just beat up the ones that got bribed, then... Mm, the money they got tempted by is pretty big, though, so I'll have to think about it.

With this, we began to lose more and more bases. Of course, none of the schools really collided with each other during their attack. In other words, they already talked this out beforehand.

But even so, we were still relatively fine. All this was expected from the beginning. In fact, we even created a plan for when we just had a single base left. Thanks to Aris' judgement, most of the students could get out before Sutr could do anything, and since the students who fought Masokasia wasn't incapacitated, the number of students didn't change that much from the beginning.

“Mm?”

At this time, I could see a student from our school moving with a student from Marcis.

-Isn't that the prez?

One of the two student was definitely our school's council president. What was he doing here?

The one who was broadcasting the battle seemed to be curious of this as well, and managed to zoom in on the two students.

And.

-Will you... will you really be alright?

-...I feel sorry for the others, but... you're more precious to me!

With this, I understood.

Mn. Right. You're friggin' dead to me. I'll put a damn bamboo spear through you.



# Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (7)

---

## 7.25 Their story.

[1] A certain student council president's story

How long had I worked to free the student body from the hands of Nicerwin? Due to the work I put into freeing myself all this time, by the time I realized it, we were already above most of the schools in the competition.

...This means... we're close to becoming freed!

was what I had been thinking, but why is it that I'm seeing a precious person of mine cry right now?

“.....So you're asking me to lose?”

“Yeah... We'd lose otherwise.”

The girl who was wearing Arucia's uniform. She was one of the most precious people in my life, as well as my childhood friend.

I lost my ability to speak when she, a person who was always full of pride and a sense of justice, said something like this.

“Why?”

In the end, that was the only thing that managed to come out of my mouth. The girl in front of me closed her eyes, and softly let out a few words.

“...said he’d accept it.”

“What?”

“Accept us. He said he’d accept us getting together... if we win.”

“R, really?!”

She was one of my dearest childhood friends. But as a person from a relatively weak noble household, I managed to become the person from the weakest family out of all my friends.

Because of this, the father of the girl in front of me always wished that the girl would never have gotten together with me. In fact, he always wished that she’d have gotten together with the boy from a count’s family, like her. Well, there was no way that dude would’ve gotten together with her, anyway.

“Why?”

This made me even more suspicious of what was going on.

“Well... dad recently got into a huge argument after talking with

count Harcen...”

Her father and count Harcen were, if you were to put it simply, frenemies. The two of them both managed to become council presidents of Arucia and Marcis, and fought each other ever since then. The two probably got into an argument about who’d win the competition.

“But to think that he’d go so far as to say that...”

“...Well, he’s that type of person, after all. If he thinks that doing something’s the way to go, he 100% follows through with it.”

The man had retired already, but his stories were still legendary among the knights of the empire. At the same time, he was famous for following through with just about anything that he said. The man was probably regretting what he said around now.

But... but!

The comrades that I’ve worked with so far! If I were to give them up..!

The girl looked up at me with a face of a fragile girl.

“Is that... too much to ask for?”

“Of course not.”

Sorry guys, my love life takes precedence over anything else.

We exit the base with our hands held together. The fact that the students all trusted me enough to let me go by myself helped greatly.

“Is this fine? You are the president, after all.”

“You’re more important to me than anything.”

“...T, then... since we could end up winning... since dad could approve of our relationship!”

The girl looked up at me with a flushed face. Oh, dear heart, please calm down. Is this what Nicerwin’s silver elemental had spoke of? Gap moe? Cis was the one who’d usually act like this, not her... the effect is too strong!

“Again... just like in the past... well... mm...”

Her face turned so face that it almost seemed to explode. She bit down on her lips, looked hard at me, and.

“May I! Call you big brother again?!”

Wow... cute. So cute! Gap moe is the best! Seeing her look away out of embarrassment, and seeing her bite her tongue, is too cute!

My childhood friend can't be this cute!

“Of course!”

If I said no, I wouldn't be a man. No, I'd be gay. A girl like this, calling me that?!

“Mm... then, should I change as well?”

“Mn? Change what?”

“He's going to approve of us, right? Then... honey?”

“N, nn? M... me?”

Seeing her turn red again was cute. Damn it. No matter what she did, she was cute.

“Of course.”

“D, don't kid me!”

“Hm? You don't like it?”

“T, that's not it...”

She looked down on the floor to hide her reddened face. This was, truly, the best!

“Is it... is it really alright?”

I nodded.

“...I feel sorry for my comrades, but you’re more important to me!”

“S, seriously!”

I smiled as best I could, and walked over to Arucia with her.

And with this, Yugrasia, which had just lost its leader,

Under the attack of all the other schools,

Won.

.....What?

## Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (8)

---

Bang!

“There’s... there’s simply no way!”

The vice-president looked forth at me with reddened eyes. Good. It seems that the president and vice-president of the school bonded quite we...

“To think he’d get a girl before me!”

Bonded quite well my ass. This is Yugrasia, after all.

During the competition, it became impossible for professors to talk to students, due to security reasons. Of course, it was possible for them to communicate with each other during 1:1 battles, but since all the other competitions were broadcast real-time, communication during those times were forbidden. But in battles like “Capture the Flag” or “Position Warfare”, it was possible for the professors to interfere up to three times.

Of course, it was forbidden to share confidential information, but since it was a student that was contacting me, a communication was able to be established. If a different school’s council president got kidnapped, they wouldn’t have gotten the permission for communication.

In any case.

“How did you not realize that he might have a girlfriend?”

The vice president widened his eyes, and shouted.

“Because it’s him we’re talking about!!”

Mm... what the. I almost got persuaded by him. No no, hold on.

“Get rid of that type of reasoning. Think carefully. That man is actually reasonably handsome if you think about it.”

“....Nn? You’re right?”

I don’t really want to put it like this, but becoming the council president pretty much meant that the person won a popular vote. Of course, it’s not really the same as voting for the one person who spent the most money in the class during school, but it did factor in hugely. And the current president of the school was a result of a combination of money, looks, and talent.

“Even though he looks like that, he has the talent.”

Though the man was quite strange, though the man was from a lower-class noble family, he managed to become the president. He truly was a dragon that managed to climb out of a tiny well, and he was also someone that the summoner’s alliance and the military wanted very much.



He also happened to be the person with the title of “Elemental Core (The Elemental Army)”, which happened to be somewhat cringey and somewhat cool at the same time. In any case, he was one of the few representatives of the school.

Since the outside doesn’t know of what happens in the inside of the school, the man seemed to be quite popular.

“He does possess all the qualities. After all, he performed outstandingly in the last two festivals as well.”

The vice president nodded.

“All the more reason to kill him, then.”

Ah, so he’s trying to kill the president. It feels like the reason for murder bordered more on betraying the solo relationship they shared rather than betraying the school, but let’s ignore that.

“I thought he’d be my eternal friend... I thought he’d be my brother forever!!”

Why is it that I’m starting to see a black aura rise out of the vice president? No, before that, couldn’t he just go get a girlfriend instead of treating his lifelong friend like someone who just killed his mother?

“So, what are you planning on doing?”

“We’ll kill him.”

The people behind the vice president nodded. Hold on, you guys who just nodded... aren’t you all men? Were you guys the solo alliance or something?! The people behind them looked at the group with disgusted faces, but the boys who nodded didn’t seem to be concerned whatsoever. Yeah, that’s why you guys don’t have girlfriends.

-You’re solo as well, though.

Shut the hell up. I just chose not to get in a relationship. After all, family is all but a burden for a villain. Of course, heroes are ok to get in relationships. After all, no villain would want to level up a hero by killing their loved ones.

Ah, now that I look at it, this is super unfair. The hero gets to kill as many of us as he likes, but if we touch just one of his friends, he would destroy absolutely everything.

“The enemy is Arucia. Marcis would probably attack us as well if they see the chance.”

My mouth is saying the opposite of my thoughts. Truly, this is the greatest ability a villain can attain. The ability to lie naturally really is useful!

“It’s fine. We’ll be enough to... take care of that man.”

Some twelve black things appeared from the vice president’s back. What the? Are they supposed to be assassins or something? Why can’t I see their faces?!

“What the hell... are those?”

“We are brothers that promised to make girlfriends at the same time in the past!”

Wow, what a useless promise. No, before that, you guys would never get a girlfriend at that rate?

“What do you think you can do with just twelve people?”

“We can kill the president.”

“Your enemies?”

“The only enemy we have is the president!”

-Uoooooh!

The people behind the vice president all shouted in unison.

“...Did you forget that we’re still in the middle of the festival?”

“Doesn’t matter.”

Even though he looks like that, the vice president was someone who contracted a god. He might be weaker than Aris, but he still was extremely powerful. After all, he was contracted with the trickster Loki, who always had the potential to become a joker card at the most crucial of times.

But.

“Professor Nicerwin!”

The man had confidence in his eyes.

“As a man... as a man!”

His aura was beginning to extend itself from the screen, all the way to my location.

“As a man, I have learned that sometimes, I need to stand in battles that I know I would die in!”

He resembled the three hundred Spartan soldiers that went to battle the Persians that numbered up to a million.

The vice president, along with the men behind him, emit an aura that could not be ignored.

The vice president, for the first time, looked at me with a serious, determined face.

“Now is that time.”

The students all held their breath. That aura of theirs was exuding with absolute power. Right. Victory is important. But sometimes, there are things that men must do despite knowing that they'd lose.

“Fine, you may go.”

All of my instincts told me that they'd lose. But looking at them, I could feel it. I trusted that these men would be able to accomplish anything with the passion of theirs!

“Then... we shall be going.”

“Good luck.”

Like a brave general charging to his last battle, the men all bowed their heads, and silently exit the area.

Their aura caused the students around them to open up a path for them.

And once these men exit the area completely, the second vice

president of the student council, Kaan, asked me a question.

“Professor! Is it really alright to send them off like that?”

I nodded at her question. I... I can trust them!

“Ricen managed to become serious with me. And even if he looks like that, he’s contracted to a god. Believe him...”

Kaan only managed to pale after hearing this.

“But... but! That face of his! I have seen it already in the past!”

“Is that so?”

“Yes! Two years ago, during the freshmen retreat! That face of his is identical to the one he showed when he spoke of sneaking into the girl’s bath!”

I reached a conclusion immediately after hearing this.

...Crap.

# Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (9)

---

## 7.5 Their Story.

### [2] Ria El Nermia's Story

“A collaboration, is it?”

I became a little confused when I heard the president's words through the communication orb.

The message I got was simple.

I was told to take care of the students of Yugrasia with Arucia's help.

Was it because Aris managed to keep most of her students safe? Even so, I couldn't understand the need to work together with Arucia.

No, before that.

“How in the world did they manage to capture that Elemental Core?”

Nerkia Nes Leria.

Despite having been born from a low-ranking noble family, he managed to garner the respect of everyone in his school.

He was an enemy that was extremely difficult to fight, due to his use of numerous low-ranked and high-ranked elementals.

Arucia managed to capture someone like that? Honestly, I couldn't imagine anyone but me being able to capture him.

-We don't know how they achieved this. But, the important thing here is that one of the rescue members from Yugrasia is Ricen di Roa.

“The trickster, is it?”

Ricen di Roa, the trickster. He was a person who managed to contract a god.

It seemed that the synergy that he shared with his current council president was immense. The Elemental Core who was a powerful strategist, and the trickster, who was skilled in creating variables. It could even be said that the reason Yugrasia didn't fall till now was because of these two. Plus, this was all before the man even formed a contract with a god.

“Bahaha! Doesn't this sound fun?”

Sutr said this next to me. He seemed happy to be out after so long, and managed to laugh at just about anything.



“Can you fight it?”

“Demons were made to fight gods since creation.”

-If we manage to neutralize the rescue force, the people of Yugrasia we'll need to deal with would go down to just ten people. So please... Nermia... no, Ria.

I nodded.

“Let's go, Sutr.”

Shuffle, shuffle.

Sutr made his move with his unusually quiet footsteps.

“By the way, have you taken a liking to my shoulder or something?”

“Nah, just too lazy to move.”

Sutr seemed to be a little bored of just walking, for him to ask this question. His shoulders are unexpectedly comfortable to sit on, so I did just that. I trained hard after meeting the instructor... no, my teacher, but according to the teacher inside me, I was still just a couch potato. I must still have the characteristics of a mage in my blood.

Bang!

“Already?”

I frowned as I heard the explosion in the distance. As expected of Yugrasia, they attacked much faster than I thought.

“Sutr.”

“Mm.”

The moment the giant began to run, everything in front of me instantly moved to my back. Sutr’s speed was nothing like what his size might suggest. He could probably outrun a high-class wind elemental in an instant.

And once we neared the half-destroyed base in front of us.

Flinch.

“Sutr! Release!”

“Uooh!”

The moment I jumped off of Sutr’s shoulder, I released one of the chains that bound Sutr’s energy.

I could see a shadow resembling an wolf charge towards the roaring giant.

“Fenrir?”

The wolf that not even Sutr could handle easily. I frowned once Sutr said the wolf’s name out aloud.

“Demon wolf Fenrir?”

Fenrir. The demon that was said to have devoured a god.

It was a demon that resembled a giant wolf, and one that was often called the staff of destruction. It was a demon that could even fight Sutr one on one.

“Damn it, it’s not the real thing, but... be careful!”

I quickly got out of the location I was in, and... I found a joker holding a black scythe standing there.

“Was this caused by you?”

Strong. I could see this the moment I set my eyes on him. He was a person shrouded in immense darkness. For the first time, as I stared into his eyes, I felt that I might lose.

“Move.”

The man said this to me coldly.

-Sutr, this is...

-Right. It's Loki.

There were many types of summoning.

There was a summoner who used an army of summons. There was a summoner that used a single summon. A summoner that used elementals. A summoner that used demons. A summoner that used gods. They were all beings that were stronger than men.

A normal summoner would use but a fraction of a god's power in battle. But right now, the man in front of me was completely merged with the god, meaning that he had both the god's power and memories.

-Loki's powers are?

-Ah, that scythe that can shapeshift into just about anything is annoying in itself, but the one thing that's most annoying is his power.

-What are they?

-There's too many. Teleportation, earthquakes, and the power to call his three children. I can handle one of his children, but two would be a bit difficult. And... if all three were called, I could lose.

Loki's children.

The god-eating wolf, Fenrir. Jormungandr, the world snake. And lastly, the goddess of the underworld, Hel.

Each and every one of them were immensely powerful. Even if Loki did not call upon the three of them, being able to use their powers would be very difficult.

-And since Loki was the one who provided many gods with their weapons, he should be able to use them.

-Isn't that cheating...?

-But so far as I know, only a select few ever contracted Loki. And a person who managed to be able to merge completely with him... I've never seen one come out in all of history.

"Storage activate."

I activated my storage ring. Two daggers came out of the ring.

"Strengthen."

I strengthened my body as much as I could.

“Sutr, full release.”

“Uoooh!”

I released all the chains that held Sutr back. This was me at my current best.

Then, I smiled as best I could do the man in front of me.

“If I don’t want to move?”

My eyes met with the man’s. At the same time, a sharp, fragile branch came out of his hand.

“The hell? Is that the Mistilteinn? Is he crazy? I thought this was a friendly competition?”

-That’s a god-killing weapon! You’ll die if you get hit!

“Die...”

The man made a throwing motion with the branch in his hand. But I wasn’t afraid. In fact, my body relaxed as I once again neared the border between life and death.

-I'll die if I get hit? Then I just have to dodge, right?

-You idiot!

I lifted the two swords in my hand, and straightened my posture. I'll dodge as soon as he throws, and... slice.

Fling!

The Mistilteinn escaped the man's hands. At the same time, I ran forward. But then...

'He threw it somewhere else?'

I could understand what he was doing once the man spoke.

"You damn couples!"

Right. The person he was aiming at wasn't me, but... the person behind me!

I turned to look at Mistilteinn's target. When I did, my feet stopped in its tracks.

'Why?'

I could only question the current situation.

This was because.

This was because the god-killing weapon was aimed at the student council president of Yugrasia himself.



# Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (10)

---

The student council.

The one group that ranked amongst the highest in terms of stupidity in my eyes.

But outside the school itself, the value of the student council was high.

It was a team that was lead by the Elemental Core, and contained the Trickster, Empress of Earth, Soul Hunter, Princess of The Sky, Phantom Evil, etc. Every one of them were summoners who proved their worth in various competitions in the past.

And the one who was said to be the strangest member out of the entire council could be said to be the vice president, Ricen Di Roa.

He was a person who did his title of the Trickster proud. In other words, he was the cause of most of the problems in the school before I had come to the school. If I were to explain it simply:

He's just a pervert.

And a solo at that.

I remember the time when he first summoned the god who had the same title as he.

-Are you the one that called me?

The boy answered Loki, who was looking up at him whilst lying down, with this:

“According to this professor... you possess the ability to change into anything. Is that right?”

-What the, you aren't even being slightly respectful? I may look like this, but I'm still a god...

“Answer me! This is important!”

He looked at Loki with a serious face.

...Ah, come to think of it, this son of a bitch used that serious face at the time, huh.

-Well... I can?

Loki answered with a bored, uninterested tone. And Ricen, after hearing this, spoke. He said something similar to what Kaan had told me a while back.

“Then... then!”

His face was more serious than ever.

“With your ability... would I be able to peek into the forbidden area, the women’s baths?!”

It was almost as if he was proving to the world that he was crazy.

-What?

Loki’s eyes widened as he heard something that he had never heard come out of any summoner’s mouth in the past.

“Now, Trickster Loki! Form a contract with me! If I can just step into the forbidden land, you may even take my soul!”

“You bastard!”

I had told him not to put down his soul as a price, but he was doing it just to get into the women’s baths!

-Pu... puhahahahah!

Loki burst out into laughter. The domineering aura in his eyes had disappeared.

-Women’s bath... Right, if you’re a man, you need to have at least that much courage puhahahah..

Loki was rolling on the floor laughing. It almost seemed like he didn't even care about his position as a god.

“Ahh... yes. That Avalon is... a man's... a warrior's dream.”

Loki grinned as he looked at Riken's face.

-To think you'd make me laugh like this... fine, I'll form a contract with you. But I am a god. I have no need for souls. But. I want just one thing. Entertain me. There's no need for me to do anything if what you do is boring.

“Ah... if that's what you want, I'll give you plenty of it. Did you know? My nickname's 'trickster' as well.”

-Puhahaha! As I thought, humans are fun! Nowadays, they had only been asking me to make them into an emperor, or whatnot, but man! Right, I shall grant you your wish! I shall show you Avalon!

After this day, the staff members of the festival, along with teachers from different schools, came together to form a plan to stop this man.

This might seem like a funny story from the past, but this was the kid who didn't even use Loki when trying to run away from school! To think he'd call Loki just because the president got a girlfriend!

-We're here.

It was an impossibly fast speed. This was one of Loki's abilities, the "Boots of Loki". While it didn't grant its user a speed that was almost like teleportation like it did in the legends, it was still extremely hard to catch up to unless one was contracted to Hermes.

At the same time, a darkness began to spread... no, it just looked like darkness, it was actually the twelve psychopaths behind the vice president.

The fortress in front of them was the place that Arucia used as their HQ during the festival. While it looked simple and weak from the outside, it was actually fully armed, and ready to fight.

In other words, this was the enemy's base.

Normally, one would try to negotiate before fighting, but.

-Kill 'em.

Thought so. Those things aren't human. They're just murder weapons set on destroying all couples.

At the same time, they were elite summoners.

-Master, master, could it be that summoners get stronger the crazier they become?

Arcadia asked me this with a curious voice, after taking a look at the kid that contracted Loki.

“Hm? What is it?”

“Wahahahahaha!”

I turned to the two strongest people in the school next to me. Professor Muam looked back at me with a curious face, and professor Harian just laughed at the screen in front of her.

-Yeah, you might be right.

I think I might create a new research paper that states how certain summoned beasts can be attracted to perverts. Well, the Summoner's Alliance would probably do everything to stop me from publishing the thing, though.

In the video was an extreme display of a flame barrage. The barrage of fire bombs that seemed to burn the sky itself was shaking the walls of the fortress in front of them, and the spears that sprouted out of the earth rammed the gates continuously.

The cost for responding to the attack far too late was great. Arucia was a Knight School. Even experienced knights get confused by ranged attacks. Of course, this meant that the student

knights were unable to deal with the attacks effectively.

But. In just a second. All attacks were stopped by something.

“...He became a hostage, and now he’s helping the enemy?”

-He went crazy for women.

A giant phoenix. A blue whale. A green wolf. And lastly, a brown cat. Each and every one of them were powerful beasts, and around these beasts were countless lights. And atop the walls, there was he.

His clothes flapped lightly in the wind. The one who was looking downwards from the wall was the student council president of Yugrasia, and the man who betrayed the school for a woman. But for some reason, this Nerkia looked cooler than ever.

“He looks pretty nice.”

All the professors nodded after hearing Muam’s comment. Unlike other summoners who fight using only one or two high-class summoned beasts, Nerkia contracted a handful of high-class summoned beasts.

Due to this, he was able to do just about anything.

But if we were to look at this badly, he was very close to being a

jack of all trades. Controlling all that power was difficult, and his power output could only be weaker as a result.

I had asked him why he battled like this in the past, and he responded as such:

“I don’t have much talent. That’s why I need to form a contract whenever somebody says he’d make one with me.”

While his talent as a summoner was pretty good compared to a normal person, his talent among summoner nobles was average at best.

That’s why he did what he did.

But unlike his talent as a summoner, he seemed to have another talent that he was better at. That’s what he was showcasing right now. He might be one of the famous idiots in the school, but... at this moment, no one could refute his title as the “Elemental Core”.

“Did it end?”

The gates opened, and the students of Arucia all began to come out. At this point, I had given up.

While it wouldn’t be good to call all of them first-rate knights, they were still extremely strong.



If these people were to get into a close-range battle, Yugrasia stood no chance. This was why the students of our school needed to damage the enemy as much as possible with long-range attacks.

But the fortress did not allow that to happen.

And as I had expected, the students of Yugrasia began falling one by one, despite Ricen's desperate fight.

Right before everything ended, though.

Something that even I did not expect happened. Something that would rock the world of summoning itself was about to happen.

# Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (11)

---

## 7.75 Their Story

[3] The Beginning of a Legend

“Kuh!”

One of my comrades fell along with his summon. At the same time, more students from Arucia teamed up against another one of my comrade.

“Damn ittttt!”

One of them pulled up all of his power with his summon. He released a giant explosion using his salamander. It seemed too dangerous in a place of competition like this, but the magic failed to damage anyone in the area.

“Damn it... Nerkia...”

Elemental Core.

No one knew who gave this nickname to Nerkia, but it fit him perfectly.

He blocked attacks that he could block with a stronger elemental.

If he couldn't block it, he would change the direction of the attack using an elemental of the same element.

He kept his cool amongst tens of different attacks, and managed to defeat his opponents.

“Damn it... So the council presidents of all the schools are here?”

The first one was Ruan, the council president of Arucia. His sword skills that already got approved by the imperial guard was extremely hard for an amateur to counter.

At the same time, there was commander Axis, the council president of Mercaria. He was perhaps the strangest individual in the entire school.

He wasn't strong. He didn't have much mana, either. But he was still a person that many knight corps coveted. If one told a corps that only one out of Ruan and Axis could be chosen, they would ten out of ten choose Axis.

He has one talent. A talent for a strategist.

He always deploys just the right amount of people. He calculates all variables, and looks through just about any strategy. Even now, despite the fact that countless Arucia students were rushing their enemies, their number was calculated, and efficient.

If a president of Marcis joins in as well, an unbeatable team

would be formed on the spot.

Arucia, a school specializing in melee battles. Marcis, a school that specializes in ranged battles. Nerkia, an individual who protects both schools with his army of elementals. This was... unbeatable.

“But!”

Even so, I looked up at Nerkia with flaming eyes, and shouted.

“You, I cannot forgive!”

I summoned Loki’s shoes. I combined this with the power of a low-class wind elemental.

“Eh?”

“What the?!”

The students of Arucia felt a strong gust pass by them, but were unable to find me.

“I have only one goal in front of me!”

Victory? Leaving school? That didn’t matter any more. I just... wish to kill the sinner in front of me!

But.

My legs began to sink. The land around me was turning into a swamp. My speed that was like the wind began to slow. Even when I stepped in a place where there was no swamp, I almost tripped on a small rock tens of times already. More people began to catch up behind me.

This was no mere coincidence. One person. Just one person was causing this.

A style of fighting that wasn't powerful, but efficient. In the end, I was taken over by several students who rushed me.

“Nerkiaaaaaaa!”

“I'm sorry.”

I shouted towards Nerkia at the top of the wall, but I only got a short response from him.

“How could you... betray the school!”

“Have you turned crazy because of a single woman!?”

“We promised to make girlfriends at the same time, but youuuu!!!!!!”

The captured comrades began to shout along with me. It was their last words in the battlefield. After hearing these words, one purple-haired girl blushed, and shouted.

“D... don’t be mean to him! I asked him to do this!”

Nerkia’s girlfriend. His childhood friend, was it? Her hair had come all the way down to her shoulders, and as expected of a student of Arucia, her body was quite something.

Ah... I’m getting even madder from this. Nerkia, you bastard! I’ll kill you! This... this isn’t because of jealousy! It’s not! The thing in my eyes is just sweat!

A cold knight girl is beginning to tear up because of her boyfriend! Cute! I’m jea... no! I’m not jealous!

While we all denied what was happening with all our power, tears began to fall from the girl’s eyes. Normally, we’d be shocked over how we made a girl cry. But we were unable to be like this due to her following words.

“He’s... he’s just doing this to get approval from [us]!”

...Approval. That’s good.

He has to be approved. He’s from a bad family, after all. Right.

This makes complete sense.

But isn't something kind of strange?

There's a grammatical error in her sentence?

...Us?

...Us?

.....USSSSSSSSSSSSSS??????????

After this, the first miracle began.

Lumian Lekein.

He was a demon inside the school, and the strongest individual outside the school. Even within the student council of Yugrasia, he was an abnormality.

No, his summon in the first place was strange.

Normally, a summoner would form a contract with the four standard elementals. Then, he/she would form a contract with more abnormal elementals like the elemental of thunder, metal, wood, etc.

But Lumian managed to contract a rare dark elemental.

Those who knew him well made fun of him for being even darker than he already was.

And, after this, he met professor Nicerwin and contracted an even rarer elemental. He managed to form a contract with a shadow elemental, whose contractors could be counted by one hand in the entire continent.

Then, with his dark, villainous look, he normally performed his task as a secretary.

He wasn't even trying to look normal. He really was an individual who could be addressed as "Student A" in any story. Because of this, he seldom had friends, despite his ability and talent.

And the reason why he came all the way over here was simple.

He was jealous.

And angry.

But he laughed it off when the others said that they'd kill Nerkia.

Because he was so normal. Because he was just jealous. Ah, because he abandoned the entire school just for a girl. He was just



here to punch Nerkea just once.

He had just decided to give up if he got caught like this. In the end, Lumian was a person who thought to congratulate his friend after this for getting a girlfriend.

Unlike the other people in the group, he was a total normie.

The only one who had thought of congratulating Nerkea even a little bit.

But this was all before the purple-haired girl spoke.

“He’s... he’s just doing this to get approval from [us]!”

Us.

Us she says.

That was exactly what she said.

If he wasn’t mentally ill, the girl had clearly said “us”.

Makin, his friend, had answered a question that would clear up everything in his mind for him.

“...Us? US?! How many more are there!?”

“If I were to count all of them...”

If you were to count them?

“F, four?”

One. Two. Three. Four.

Lumian tried counting by folding each of my fingers. He put up his other hand, and tried to count the girlfriends he’s had in the past.

Zero, zilch, zip, nada, nothing.

It’s empty. No fingers could be folded. All five fingers were standing up straight.

-I understand your feelings.

Lumian felt a dark hand reach out to his shoulder.

It was a miracle. Also a beginning of a new story.

It spoke to him quietly.

-Are you angry?

Lumian was angry.

Because he was simple. Because he was normal. Because he thought of Nerkia the most. Because of this, the feeling of anger hit Lumian harder than anything.

-Right. He betrayed you. He betrayed you, and the school.

Maybe this had to be done. Maybe this was inevitable. Even in this situation, Lumian tried to understand Nerkia. Even though he looked shady, even though he couldn't get along with others. But even so, Lumian tried to trust Nerkia.

Because of this.

“This is making me even madder?”

-Right. It's maddening. But you have no power. In the first place, you are outnumbered.

Then, he understood. The owner of this power was not the elemental of darkness he contracted with, nor the elemental of shadow. It was the strongest elemental he had ever seen. Perhaps the only one that could compete against this elemental was the lord of water that professor Muam possessed.

-I'll give you strength, angered one.

“The price for that is?”

-Ahh, your anger that has managed to captivate me is enough.

The strength that he felt on his shoulders began to spread all across his body. It wrapped around him, then loosened. The process repeated several times. Lumian made a smile that would've surprised those who knew him. Then, he spoke.

“Good. I, Lumian Lekein, will entrust this anger to you.”

-Kuhahaha! Good, it's been 7000 years since my last contract. Treat me well. My name is Wrath. I am one of the seven sins, Wrath itself! I am the most primal of the elemental kings, the king of emotion!

At the same time, an invisible hand assaulted the students of Arucia.

“Ah... what the hell. I'm getting mad all of the sudden.”

“What, you have a problem with me or something?”

“You think you know everything just because you're older than me?”

Clang.

The students of Arucia began to fight amongst themselves. This was the power of wrath. Just by spreading anger all around him, one could make armies fight amongst themselves!

It was a power that truly could not be stopped.

This was an event that proved the existence of elementals of emotion, and also the event that managed to put the alliance that centered around Arucia to its knees.

# Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (12)

---

## 7.75 Their Story

[3] The Beginning of a Legend 2

Chaos.

This described the current situation perfectly.

Everyone was getting enraged at each other. The smallest things on the battlefield provoked the students to fight.

No matter from what perspective, this was a strange situation. But rage blinded logic, and those without logic didn't attempt to understand what was going on. They simply left everything to rage.

“...This isn't magic.”

Axis attempted to try and find the source of the strange power with all his ability, but could not find anything. In this case, this probably was...

“It's an elemental.”

Everyone turned towards me. There was only a single reason why

I knew why this was a work of an elemental. The elementals around me. The weakest elementals by my stead unsummoned themselves already. The middle-class elementals were trembling in fear. I could just barely use the high-class elementals, but even they seemed afraid of something.

Elementals were beings that wouldn't even be afraid of a god as long as the elements didn't match. But if all elementals around me were trembling in fear, there was only one answer.

“An elemental king.”

Even if they say that elementals don't care about beings that do not have the same properties as them, the story becomes different.

An elemental king was the lord of a certain element. It represented a whole of a certain element of a world.

But.

“An element with this kind of power?”

There was no warning. The attack came suddenly. No, it came naturally.

It was strange, and peculiar.

“But it's still doable.”

At least he had a chance, unlike when he fought the silver bat. Thankfully, Ruan and a select few of his army seemed to have resistance to this power, and were managing to fight back, somewhat. Then, he only had one thing left to do.

“We just need to take down the one controlling this elemental.”

Those around me nodded. All the schools got together to take down Yugrasia. If those of Marcis join in as well, Yugrasia definitely cannot win.

“Will you be alright?”

She asked me this with a face full of regret. Instead of replying, I simply decided to scuffle her hair.

“We’ll destroy them with a single attack.”

I unsummoned all my mid-class elementals as I said this. Right now, it was difficult to use anything other than high-class elementals. Although it was outside my area of expertise, I’d have to resort to using a small number of elites. Thankfully, our enemies seem to be in a difficult situa...

Shiver!

I suddenly felt an enormous amount of power make its move.



But, this was something that wasn't possible for a human. Not even professor Muam could use this much power.

“Above!”

“Nerkia! Block it!”

The council president of Marcis, Martan, shouted this as he began to cast a shield spell. I, too, geared all my elementals for defence and looked up.

Above us were several spheres of light that were expanding in size. These spheres were slowly rotating as they continuously increased in volume.

These things revolved around the castle as they became bigger and bigger. I had heard of something like this happening in the past. But!

“I thought it was a legend from the creation era?!”

The creation era. It was a time not long before the gods made this world. Angels fought with demons, and elementals fought amongst each other for the most strength.

During that time, several elementals became corrupted by an evil strength, and turned to something that was known as the “elemental of evil.” Among them appeared the elemental king of evil. This elemental was terrifyingly powerful, and once it

swallowed four elemental kings, all elementals in the world realized that they were in danger.

In the end, the rest of the eighteen kings combined their power, and managed to get rid of the evil elementals.

At that time, the elemental kings all linked their power, merged their elements, and attacked the evil elementals. An attack similar to this was currently floating in the air besides us.

The name of this attack was:

-Elemental Burst.

Several voices spoke at once. When the ten student council members said this along with their elementals, the entire world flipped.

In the case of magic, several wizards can work together to form a stronger spell.

It was often used to cast not only a high-class spell, but also a national-class spell. But elementals were unable to do this.

Magic had a flow of its own. But this flow could be controlled. Those who use magic are always individuals. Forming a connection between individuals was not that hard.

This wasn't the case for elementals, though. A connection between an individual and an elemental. There were those who controlled a numerous amount of elementals, but this was just a connection between a single man and an elemental. If one were to try and connect to a different elemental of a different person, one had to establish a connection between that elemental's summoner first. Ethereal beings like elementals were said to be unable to establish several different connections with different people, though.

Some said that this was possible for demons, but their pride didn't allow them to do anything like that.

They were beings that would even go so far as to not form a contract with someone just because they didn't like some other being the summoner contracted.

Because of this, most people believe that it is impossible to connect elementals together.

But due to the students' rage at Nerkea allowed the students to pass the first requirement to form this connection.

-I'll kill that bastard.

The students had been all connected by a single, powerful emotion. This emotion managed to connect each elemental of each summoner into a single being.

This ended up allowing the students to create the stuff of legends itself.

-Elemental burst.

The low-class, mid-class, and the high-class elementals all bunched up together into a ball of light, and descended.

It was a domineering show of strength.

It was a power that could not be blocked.

This attack easily broke through Marcis' shield, destroyed the entire formation of students, and defeated each of Nerkia's elementals. As it did this, it seemed to begin losing strength.

But!

-Uoooh! Diee!

Once they saw Nerkia hug his girlfriend in order to protect her, the students began to exert more power than ever before.

Then, they fell down with satisfactory smiles.

This was the second miracle. This was the first time when the world found out that elementals could be connected together, and

also the time when Arucia's infamous formation got destroyed with a single strike.

# Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (13)

---

## 7.75 Their Story

[3] The Beginning of a Legend 3

Us.

Us.

Us.

My thoughts stopped due to the voice ringing in my head. Those words eventually converted everything in my head into anger.

I didn't know what happened, but the battle was now in their favor.

Ten of my comrades sacrificed their lives in order to break the enemy base. But even so, we were being pushed back. One of our summoners tried to fight, but there were still numerous enemies.

Once the base was destroyed, the students of Arucia stopped defending and began to fight back.

And I couldn't beat something like that. With my state like this, I couldn't ever fight.

And at that moment, I learned something.

“Impossible? What’s that? Can you eat it?”

-Are you mad?

I called the god that I was contracted with. But the god seemed quite skeptical.

-No way you can beat them. The ones fighting right now are pretty damn strong for their age. They probably can hold their own against newbie knights, actually. Plus, most of the guys that were in the castle are still fine? Most of our people are knocked out as well. And then there’s that black dude... haven’t seen him in several thousand years. The elemental burst, too, wasn’t something that I haven’t seen ever in my life? You guys did enough?

Right. We did enough. We’ve never seen three schools get into an alliance, and we’ve never seen just thirteen people break such an alliance.

But.

“You see, Loki. The thing about tricksters are.”

-Hm? What are you talking about.

Loki became confused when he heard his nickname, but I didn't respond.

“Just shut up and listen. Tricksters are people who don't give a damn about the order of the world, or morality.”

A normie would not put his life on the line to peek at a woman's baths. A normie would not stay up for days trying to find a way to get into the girl's locker room. This would be a morally wrong thing to do, and it's also something that would justify getting someone arrested.

“But these people don't get the title of a 'trickster' from doing that.”

-Well, that's because they're perverts, not tricksters.

“That's right.”

The people who just peep into women's baths are perverts. Those who peep into the locker rooms are also perverts. Right. They were all just perverts.

“But I am called a trickster.”

I am not called a pervert. Even women call me a trickster behind my back.



“That’s what a trickster is. They are intelligent, elaborate, and cunning. They create chaos. They always play tricks, and make things harder for everyone. They are the symbols of change and rebellion.”

Right. Because of this.

“Doesn’t it only make sense that I manage to win in a situation like this?”

Loki did not smile at my insane grin.

-Child, you are one who calls himself a trickster to me, who is the only one in the heavenly realm with such a title. To you, I will teach you one thing.

“What is it?”

I wasn’t at all surprised at Loki’s sudden turn of seriousness. In fact, it just made my grin wider.

-Child, it seems that you humans call the strongest form of using a god’s power as “possession.” But the thing is, we are already in that state. We enter that state once we form a contract with you. Possession really isn’t much. It’s just something that you think of as an amazing thing, which limits you from using it. In fact, it’s just something that you can use as long as you wish to use it. So in other words.

Loki made a grin that was just like mine.

-If you truly are the one who is worthy of being called a trickster, then use it. Use my power to the fullest.

When I heard, no, saw his smile, I understood. I understood the foundation of Loki's power, and the immenseness of it itself.

The scythe of chaos appeared in my hand. The boots of speed appeared on my feet. The mask of the joker appeared on my face.

There was no need to wish for strength. After all, it was mine from the start.

There was no need to wish for weapons. After all, it was mine from the beginning.

It didn't matter who the enemy was. He was Loki, and Loki was him.

“Now then, shall we dance?”

-Now then, shall we dance?

When the two became one, a legend began.

# Chapter 7. We Came, We Saw, We Won. (14)

---

## 7.9 Their Story

[4] The story of a certain organization

“Just... just what went wrong?”

Mercen, a member of the rebellion, thought of what had went wrong in this operation.

Their plan was perfect. They had predicted everything about the competition correctly. They knew Nerkia would be kidnapped, they knew that the schools would ally against Yugrasia, and they even knew of what competition the empire would present.

Everything was perfect.

But.

“...Annihilated..?”

She bit her lips, and looked around herself. There were only ruins. Normally, in a war game like this one, schools tended to move around frequently, but Arucia had the tendency to stay where they were. As such, the rebellion decided to base their movements around Arucia.

They were planning on taking these students as hostage to threaten the empire with, as they attacked the imperial castle.

But most of their forces in the war games were already incapacitated.

All thanks to the legendary strike from the elementals.

That attack wasn't something that Nerkia and the other schools blocked by themselves. The reason why they could get through safely was because of the rebellion's sacrifice.

The rebellion had attempted to block the strike before Nerkia, and most of their mages had to retire after attempting to do so.

The swordsmen were still able to fight, but the mages weren't.

In other words, the operation had essentially failed.

“But, I can't just let it end like this!”

But she did not give up. They still had a chance. Most of the students were unconscious from the first attack as well. And due to the conscious students having to fight Yugrasia still, she began to see a glimmer of hope in this situation.

Her subordinates seemed to realize this as well, seeing that they

were stepping forward with renewed strength.

And they realized.

“We... can’t win.”

The scenery that was presented before them taught them this.

The scenery of Ruan, Arucia’s student council president, dangling on a giant black scythe. The scenery of Axis, Mercaria’s student council president, being stuck unconscious in a corner somewhere. The scenery of Nerkia and Marcis huffing exhaustedly...

When they saw the black joker that was in the middle of all this... they, the ones who were hanging onto the last strands of their hope, realized.

They realized after seeing the numerous eyes within the joker that, no matter what they did, they would lose. That no matter what happened, they must run.

But the joker did not want them to run.

“Go bite, puppies.”

At the same time, tens of wolves sprouted out of the shadows.

The rebellion was crushed.

And this would continue until a certain mage would arrive with her demon.

# **Chapter 8 - I Came To End It All**

# Chapter 8. I Came To End It All. (1)

---

“What is this?”

The longer I looked at what was going on, the more I didn't understand. It seemed that by the end, all the schools got pretty much wiped.

The competition was pretty much over at this rate. Several Yugrasia students were roaming the grounds taking care of leftover students from other schools. And the most powerful enemy student, Ria, was unable to move due to the vice pres' attacks.

Ria, who should normally be able to take on everyone in the Student Council at once, was barely fending off the vice president.

Well, I probably won't be able to take someone like him as well.

But there was one thing that made me realize that despite the current situation, I would never be able to win. This was because there were many skills that were being used that were illegal in the competition.

Due to the fact that in the past, there were several assassination attempts between students due to a political struggle, many restrictions were put in place to prevent death.

But the type of magic that these kids were using were all things



that could kill a normal person.

But then again, no one was dying. Even though the fight continuously got more and more intense, no one was dying.

One could say that the kids were controlling their power, but there was no way these enraged kids were able to control anything.

No, in the first place, no one should be able to control the power of the Mistilteinn. If Ria didn't manage to block that, the council president would be dead. If that happened, the fate of Yugrasia would be completely sealed.

I almost lost the one job that I thought of continuing all the way till my retirement.

“Professor Nicerwin? If you would come with us.”

Was my predictions correct? Several government officials came over to the Yugrasia faculty to say this. But why me?!

I'm definitely going to be bombarded with complaints! I might even end up having to resign!

“Alright.”

But I couldn't do anything except follow them.

## 8.25 Their Story

[1] Ria El Nermia's Story

"I almost died."

-No no no no no! What are you talking about?! The one who almost died was me, you idiot!

Sutr shouted at me out of anger. Normally, I'd shut him up in an instant, but since his arm got chopped off, I decided to let him off the hook.

"...Don't interfere!"

The vice president of Yugrasia walked towards me with a vast amount of killing intent.

Just a moment ago, I tried to block Mistilteinn with Sutr, as it was said to be the ultimate god-killing weapon, but not a demon-killing one. My suspicions came out to be true.

-No, that's not the case at all? Demons get screwed by that thing as well? If it wasn't for the Mistilteinn being a replica, and the barrier that was set up in front of me, my life would've been in danger!

“Did you forget that murder is forbidden in the competition?”

“One does not use such a word when killing an insect.”

I couldn't say anything when I heard the man's relentless words. There weren't many people even in the Howling organization that thought like this man.

Right. To this person, nothing mattered more than the one target in his mind.

-If you can't win, then don't fight in the first place.

I thought of my teacher's words from the past. Fight something like that right now? Impossible. Normally I'd be able to go toe-to-toe with this man, but with Sutr's arm gone, this was impossible.

Sutr probably could regenerate his arm given a bit of time, but there was no way the other side would wait that long. I could probably fight on my own, but not against a man who took in Loki himself.

The only answer here was to not fight. I needed to do something else.

The other side was here because... of just one reason. Jealousy towards couples. And it seemed that this jealousy was only directed towards the council president of Yugrasia.

In other words.

“You envy him.”

“Kuh!”

The man flinched after hearing this, and roared in anger.

“What do you know?! T, this isn’t envy!”

After saying this, the man glared at me with hateful eyes.

“You’re the same! A good family, a lot of talent, and pretty to boot. You probably have a boyfriend already!”

...No? Excuse me, but I’m single as well?

I never thought of romance due to the situation my family was in, and my teacher made me dismiss the thought completely as well. I just didn’t really care for romance.

While I stood there frowning without saying anything, the council president and his girlfriend behind me stood up. And.

“I pity the fool who does not know the power of love!”

“I pity you, who cannot appreciate the beauty of love!”

“Shut up!”

They both said something quite annoying at once. Actually, their statements made me a little pissed as well.

“Um... does that make me a pitiable fool too, then?”

The two people froze.

“Y, you...”

The vice president’s eyes began to fill with an emotion different from that of hate. This was...

“No, please don’t look at me like you just met a comrade.”

The man was looking at me with a mixture of the feeling one would get after finding a long-lost brother, and the feeling one would get when looking at a war orphan. I looked past that, and turned to the council president and his girlfriend.

“Am I, who does not know the beauty of love, a pitiable fool?”

“N, no, well...”

“I thought you’d have someone already...”

I stepped closer to the two.

“I’m single. Never loved, or have been loved by someone outside my family. Everyone always looks at me, thinks ‘I’m going to be rejected anyway’, and never approaches me.”

Of course, I’d reject anyone in a heartbeat, but I was still angry at the couple for calling a person like me a pitiable fool.

“You say something like this to someone who just did everything to protect you? Sutr got his arm blown off trying to save you two, even?”

-No, you told me to do th... mm...

Sutr looked away when I glared at him.

“In any case, I wonder what would happen if I stepped away here?”

“...Please save us.”

I smiled at the council president.

“I don’t want to.”

I walked past the vice president after saying this. I could hear screams behind me, but it wasn't really worth saving the couple anyway.

The enemy that now lost his purpose would probably become confused. The best thing that could happen was to have him sever his connection with Loki. At this point, when most people were already incapacitated, the ones that I really needed to be careful of from Yugrasia were few...

“No... nevermind...”

There were actually quite a lot. Hnng...

-Can't we just destroy them all?

“Oh great demon lord Sutr who just lost his arm, shut the hell up.”

I ignored Sutr muttering something to himself in the corner, and began to think. The number of enemies we have. Their core members. Their strongest units. But, all these thoughts got erased quite soon.

There was someone in front of me.

Someone that I had not believed I would ever meet again, despite

having spent a huge amount of time with.

“46?”

“No, right now, I am Mirua.”

“B, before tha...”

I tried to say something, but 46, no, Mirua cut me off, and smiled.

“Let’s go.”

“To where?”

She responded casually to me.

“To the instructor.”



## Chapter 8. I Came To End It All. (2)

---

When I passed by Yugrasia with the members of the administration group, I stopped for a second. The person who seemed to be their leader looked at me.

“Is there a problem?”

“I have the files necessary to explain the situation back in Yugrasia... may I go get them?”

“Mm... I don't think you'll need them. Let's just go.”

I smiled brightly at the leader who told me this.

“That's right, I wouldn't need them, especially when we're going to meet the princess. Right, Miss Lia?”

Several members of the group froze immediately. Lia, however, simply smiled at me.

“You remember me?”

“I did work under her at some point, after all. Why wouldn't I know of her favorite shadow? By the way, you crossdress really well.”

“Mm... are you making fun of my breasts?”

“Aah, that is not the case. I am simply stating that you have the great ability to embrace the appearance of either a man or a woman when necessary.”

We both took out our weapons with smiling faces. Dangerous, dangerous. Really, super dangerous.

“Would you mind if I run here?”

“It would be better for you to just walk.”

“Ahh... you know as well as I do that you won't be able to capture me with just this. The princess must be working hard in the shadows right now.”

I thought of my former boss who had sent me a congratulation letter for me losing my job, and shook my head.

That person definitely wouldn't have just planned this far. Especially seeing that the rest of the group seemed to be confused as to what was going on. This meant that the princess used real members of the committee for legitimacy, which would make it so that there were only five people here to catch me. This can't be everything.

“Well, you're right. Her majesty seemed to have something else in plan, but... could you just get caught here?”

“You should know as well as me what would happen to me if I got caught?”

“Even so, the princess is... Mm... Mmm...”

Lia’s face began to stiffen.

“You should just stop if you don’t have anything good to say about her.”

“...I’m sorry. I don’t have anything.”

Thankfully, Lia shut her mouth. If she was anyone more unreasonable, she’d say something ridiculous, but thankfully, she wasn’t.

“Then could you just let go of me?”

“I’ve spoken too much. Sir Aast. No, is it Sir Nicerwin now?”

“You can call me by whatever.”

“Right. Then, Sir Aast, you must’ve prepared something. Are you ready?”

My grin turned wider when I heard the girl say this to me. I lifted my hands.

“Ahh... it’s just a simple.”

Tick.

“Smoke bomb.”

“So simp... cough?”

Coughs began to come out of the people around me. Although it looked like a normal smoke bomb, it actually emits chemical gas. This wasn’t a poison gas or anything, but it was very, very spicy.

“W-wait... Cough... coughkek?”

I ran like hell after putting on a gas mask. The traps that I installed to stop the students from getting out also worked very well for fending off attackers. Of course, the princess might’ve put subordinates in the school, but it was easier to fight them in the school than at a place like this.

And after I prepared myself for the upcoming battle in Yugrasia.

-There’s no one here.

“You’re right?”

It was too silent. But there was nothing around. Strange. Too strange. Strange... The princess would definitely gather enough knights in one room according to the number of desks in the class, and make them go, “Stand! All attack the teacher!” and attempt to capture me. Having things be this silent was just too weird.

Plus.

Bang bang!

“Sir Aast! I’m a woman, you know! Don’t you think this was too much?! Don’t you think it’s too much to make a woman get snot and tears all over her face?!”

Lia was being quite scary at the door. I didn’t think the bomb would be that effective.

“Open the door! Open the damn door!”

She was a prestigious shadow knight of the princess, but unfortunately the dwarven prison didn’t grant her her wish.

Since those bars were made with magic-reinforced steel, she shouldn’t be able to break it easily.

-But it’s not like you can stay here forever?

“That is true, but... Mm...”

It felt uncomfortable. It felt like my shoes were getting wet in the rain despite having an umbrella. It feels like wearing shoes after a storm has passed, only to find out the shoes were wet.

The enemy was the princess. My previous boss. The one who makes me get nightmares every night about having to run away from the Evil Organization I was in as a traitor.

-Why don't you just use the secret escape paths? Aren't you screwed anyway?

"Yeah, I'm screwed."

I was screwed. I thought that doing things big would allow me to hide better, but that wasn't the case at all.

"I should've spent only a fraction of my cash if I knew this would happen..."

I thought of spending at least three years here... I still haven't earned back any of my cash! I only collected a little bit of cash under the guise of donations!

I haven't turned the student body into a group of elites for nothing. I was planning on using the money from the festival to resupply my fund, but my 3-year plan got shattered in just a year.

-Why don't you just go under the princess? She seems to like you a lot. Plus, doesn't she treat you well?

“Well, you're not wrong. It's a job for life as well. I can also earn several times more than the amount I earned in Howling. If I sneak some cash away, I'd be able to earn even more.”

But my life would go to shit if I worked for her.

“The last time we talked, she said ‘You took my first time, you took the empire's, my, precious thing... and you run away now?!’ to me. I wouldn't be able to live safely if I go back.”

-.....Uh. What did you do? You just made me really curious?

I became a little confused when Arcadia suddenly began to talk in a formal tone. Kind of like switching from comic sans to a Times New Roman all of the sudden? Honestly, it felt like this was the first time she ever spoke to me seriously.

I should answer... Mm...

“Well... what should I say... Mm... I forcefully took away something that she had been guarding with her life?”

-.....That was before I was born.

“Right.”

-.....From what I've heard, the princess is a very beautiful woman?

“Mm... she was quite famous in the palace even in my time for being so beautiful and intelligent. She'd probably be getting a lot of marriage requests about now?”

-How old is she?

“...Can you just talk as you normally did? Feels weird. And... she'd be twenty four now?”

-.....Before I was born, so... around ten years. Fourteen, then?

After muttering a bit more to herself for a while, Arcadia seemed to realize something, then began to scream.

-.....A lolicon! Mr. Knight! Here! A lolicon is herereeeeeee?!

“Wait, hold up, just what are you thinking?”

-You damn lolicon! You took something precious from a fourteen year old? Are you kidding me? My owner was this much of a perv... hahn... he's a pervert... maybe he's looking at me that way as well?!



“...Shut up.”

Aah... just what was she thinking about... No, hold on. It actually does seem like I spoke like a pervert just then. That isn't the case at all, though!

-My owner's a total perv! A perv! Huahahahaha! As expected of him!

“You know what... whatever.”

My confused mind just kept getting more and more confused. My head was filled with Arucia screaming [Perv! Perv!] and Lia was outside punching the steel bars. Even now, no one attacked. I expected at least a hundred to be hidden, but there was none. But this was the princess we're dealing with.

“Well, there's really only one option, though.”

There was only one exit anyway. I should be able to buy some time here.

After thinking this, I quickly moved towards the secret passage. There was no way the princess would know of a passage like this. In the first place, the only ones who knew of its existence was me and the dwarves.

Did that let my guard down too much?

Crack!

A sudden impact. It was actually a relatively light blow, but my body could not move. This familiar feeling... this is...

“Wh-why... why is that thing?!”

My legs gave out. But the shock that I got prevented me from standing up. Instead, I could only look at the object I used with love and care a few years back.

And the person who was holding the object, one of the most influential people in the empire, smiled at me brightly.

“Ah, I took it from him.”

Rein... that bastard...

## Chapter 8. I Came To End It All. (3)

---

I was in a world of pain.

Who the hell made me like this in the first place? I can't use any energy, no god's or demon's blessings or curses work on me, but strangely enough, the pain of the bat could still be felt. So in the end, all men were equal under the bat?!

No, in any case.

“How did you... find out about this place?”

I barely managed to stand up, and say this. The princess maintained her evil smile, and spoke.

“I bought it from the dwarves? They said you didn't pay enough for them to keep their mouths shut, so I bought it.”

“...Is that so.”

Damn traitors! Did they even know how much money I threw at them till now? Couldn't they do me a little favor after all this time? I was a VVIP to them, damn it! But then again, it is true that I haven't paid them to keep their mouths shut, so I'll just leave that be. In any case.

[Let's get myself prepared first.]

I could only see the princess in front of me, but there probably were hidden fighters lurking in the shadows. Plus, the princess herself was a skilled fighter. The best of the best, in fact. Fighting with assassins all this time had sharpened her skills like no other. It wasn't like I couldn't subdue her, but at this point where my best weapon turned into my most dreaded one, I could only use my own weapon of destruction.

But.

-Hey hey. By the way~ no matter how useful I am, no matter how much mana I can gather on my own, no matter how much like a legendary weapon I am...

[...What are you trying to say here?]

-Didn't you use me like, a lot? Ever since we came out of the organization?

[...The point is?]

-Pii! No energy left! I can still fight, but no magic! You're fucked! Big time!

I got the world's worst response ever. Well, it is true that I used her mana up like no other the past year... So this should be obvious... but... why now?!

“Oh my, I haven’t seem a surprised face of yours in a while? Mm... did you like my surprise that much?”

“You seem to have a lot of free time nowadays.”

“Pft, the only time I’d have free time would be when the empire disappears. I’m pretty tired, you know? Especially with all the infighting in the family?”

The princess was clearly enjoying this.

-Can’t you just capture her as hostage? I can still hit, you know?

[I’m telling you, I’d die before that.]

According to the empire’s creation story, the imperial family had the blessings of a dragon running in their blood. Because of this, every member in the imperial family had enormous strength within their body. Right now, the key members who showed this blessing in full effect were the princess and the third prince.

No, actually, even the third prince pales in comparison to the princess. I can’t beat her like this.

“Mr. Aast!”

I can even hear Lia’s angered voice behind me. Damn it, damn it. There’s no way to get out...

“You can’t escape! Just give up!”

“Oh, dear Lia. Don’t tease him too much... who knows? Maybe he might have a way.”

My spine shivered when I the smile that just tempted me to try and run, but the one who actually got scared was Lia.

“Y-your majesty... You’re being quite scary, so would you please restrain your smile a bit?”

“Hohoho, don’t be so scared. I’m just happy.”

Lia’s group began to tremble when the princess widened her smile. Ah, that smile. It resembles the smile she had when she jailed one of the nobles who stared at her pervertedly.

“Are you that confident?”

I tried saying something. I just needed to get some time. More time to think is good. And Lia, as a person who just enjoys talking in general, might throw me a clue.

“Of course we are! Even now, you are completely surrounded by her majesty and her shadow knights!”

As expected, Lia immediately began to talk with pride. For now...

the princess was 15 meters in front of me. Behind me by twenty meters were... Lia and her group of knights, who numbered about... twenty.

“We cleared out all of your traps in this passage as well. Plus!”

There were probably less people behind me than in front of me. Going back would probably be for the best. But the princess probably expected me to do that. And right now, when the bat couldn't make use of its power, it'd be difficult for me to escape fast enough.

“I even installed an energy-restricting device you developed, Mr. Aast, so that you wouldn't be able to use any of your strength...”

The princess and I both responded to that statement simultaneously.

“Thanks!” “The hell?!”

The princess immediately swung her bat my way. But.

Clang!

-Huahaha! It's still too early for you to be challenging your elder sister!

The steel bat shouted in pride. No, before that. The wooden bat

should be the elder sister in this equation?

“Catch him!”

Knights began to gather from behind the princess. Lia’s group managed to take out their weapons as well. But.

“Haa?!”

The princess let go of the bat in her hand for a split second after being hit on her wrist. I didn’t let go of this chance, and pushed in for another strike.

“...Kuh! Lia! I’ll kill you if he escapes!”

I could feel a sword coming in behind me as I saw the princess move back, giving up the wooden bat. But.

Clang!

“Kuuuh?!”

I blocked the sword strike with the steel bat, and hit the hips with the wooden bat. The shadow knights guarded their pressure points for the most part, which made them easier to fight.

“Kuha?!”



“Guh?”

“W-what the?!”

Three knights were incapacitated in an instant. All these people had resistance to torture due to intense training, but all such efforts were useless in front of the bat. Lia came at me with a confused look, but I simply kept running.

“Lia! Go turn off that energy restricting device now! Why the hell did you install such a thing?!”

“We-we’ll have to go the the kuh? Dungeon entrance for thaaaa?!”

Lia’s leg almost crumpled as she tried to talk with the princess.

“T-this much is?!”

“Then one more it is.”

“Kyaaa?!”

She resisted the wooden bat somehow, but the blow from the steel bat finally destroyed her. I could hear the princess shout something behind me, but right now, I had to run like hell. The knights behind were slowly advancing in their armor. These

people were resistant to the bat. I couldn't really fight them.

I neutralized all enemies in front of me, and returned to Yugrasia. And once I did so...

“We were waiting.”

...Hot damn. My former disciples were waiting for me.

46 was bowing towards me, and the other two were staring at me with surprised faces.

“Yes, it's been a while.”

I erased my smile. 17 finally seemed to understand what was going on somewhat, and talked to me with a trembling voice.

“So it was all... an act?”

“I wouldn't have survived in the capital otherwise. In any case, 46... no, is it Mirua? You became a lot more like a human.”

“If just acting a bit politely makes me more like a human, well... I'll just say I learned how to be courteous.”

I shook my head.

“No, if you learned under the princess, you will do well to remember that this isn’t just learning normal ‘courteousness’. The woman is quite the thing.”

A look that rivaled that of the elves. Stubbornness of the dwarves. Evil that rivaled the demons. Pride of the dragon. Pureness of an elemental, and an obsession like that of a god. If one tried to learn courteousness from someone like that, the society would kill the person immediately.

“But in any case... to think you’d go to Marcis. What a shame.”

“Y-yes...”

Ria stepped back a little as she stared at the two bats in my hand. Good. They still haven’t forgotten. Well, it’s a bit obvious that they wouldn’t have forgotten.

The bats played too big of a part in their life for anything otherwise.

“Mm... instructor, how about taking those hideous things somewhere else for a moment?”

Mirua said this as he looked at the two bats.

-H-hideous! You call these smooth curves of mine hideous?!

“I feel that my life is at danger here, so I will have to decline.”

“The princess will not kill you.”

“Sometimes, death is better than life.”

“...The princess will reward you accordingly.”

Well, that is true. The reason why the princess has so many geniuses under her is because she pays well.

Because the imperial palace is a place that treats blood as importantly as some damn eyes in a certain ninja village, nobles there tended to treat those under them like the expendables.

But the princess got rid of all that. The number of nobles that got retribution from her for treating a former peasant in her ranks rudely already numbered in the thousands. The nobles that tried to argue with the emperor about it was about to enter the thousands as well, if I remembered correctly. Well, it's been awhile since I left, so the number probably went well past a thousand at this point.

In any case, it wasn't that bad to work under the princess... would be what you'd think, but the princess does suck up as much as she gives. Plus, she has extremely high expectations for me, so it's not known just how much she'll suck from me. And there's also the fact that I've almost been assassinated several times already.

I've already given up on working inside an Evil Organization. No way I'd go to a place filled with infighting! No! I won't do it! Ever!

